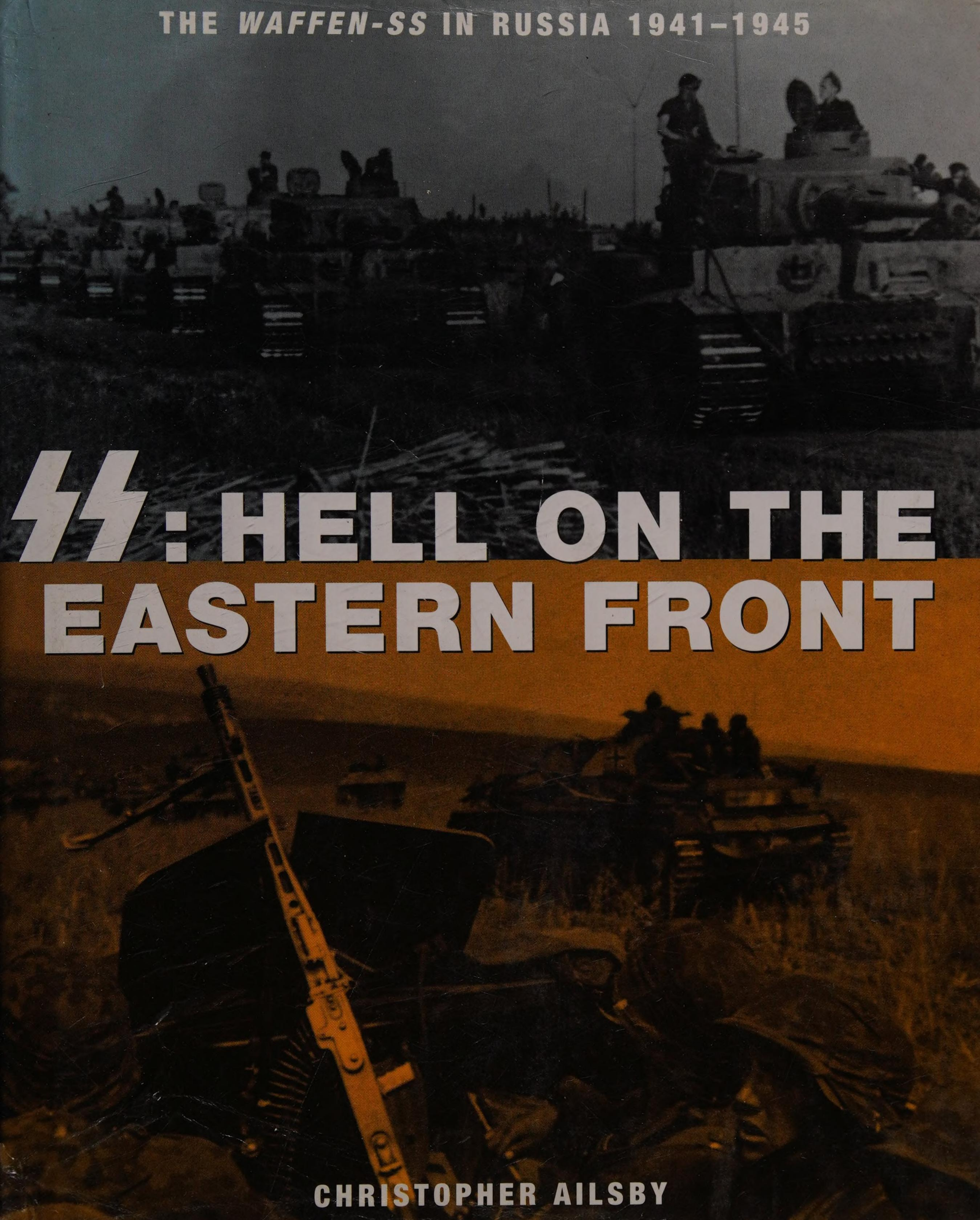
THE *WAFFEN-SS* IN RUSSIA 1941–1945

SS: HELL ON THE EASTERN FRONT



CHRISTOPHER AILSBY

The Eastern Front was the scene of the m decisive campaign of World War II. Hitler élite soldiers, the Waffen-SS, fought in the East from the beginning of the Russian campaign in 1941 to the fall of Berlin in May 1945, and the SS's development and military professionalism is bound up with the war in the Soviet Union. As the war in Russia progressed, the formations of the Waffen-SS distinguished themselves in the most demanding theatre of World War II. The premier Waffen-SS formations, the *Leibstandarte, Das Reich, Totenkopf* and *Wiking* Divisions, showed themselves to be masters of mechanised warfare and the all-arms battle. *SS: Hell on the Eastern Front* is a detailed account, enhanced by more than 100 exciting black-and-white photographs, of every aspect of the Waffen-SS's war on the Eastern Front: its battles, its organisation, tactics and equipment.

Read what it was like to take part in Operation 'Barbarossa', the opening assault against Russia in the summer of 1941, when the Waffen-SS fought its way to the very gates of Moscow; the first dreadful winter in Russia, during which temperatures dropped to 40 degrees below zero; the clash of massed armour at Kursk; and other epic encounters of the war in the East: it also examines the recruitment and organisation of those foreign legions of the SS that fought on the Eastern Front.

Also covered in full is every aspect of the Waffen-SS's war – away from the battlefield – against Soviet partisans. In addition, the book examines the military consequences of Waffen-SS soldiers being ideologically indoctrinated, their concept of hardness and disregard for life, which often resulted in atrocities and the murder of civilians and prisoners. Above all, *SS: Hell on the Eastern Front* provides an insight into how Waffen-SS individuals and units met and often mastered their Red Army adversaries, first during the offensive campaigns of 1941–43, but most strikingly during the great defensive actions of the last two years of the war. With detailed appendices covering the order of battle of the Waffen-SS in the East, plus rank and award tables, *SS: Hell on the Eastern Front* is the most detailed study of the Waffen-SS's war in Russia yet published.

£18.99

SS: HELL ON THE EASTERN FRONT

THE *WAFFEN-SS* IN RUSSIA 1941–1945

SS: HELL ON THE EASTERN FRONT

CHRISTOPHER AILSBY

SPELLMOUNT
Staplehurst

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data:
A catalogue record for this book is available
from the British Library

Copyright © Amber Books Ltd 1998

ISBN 1-86227-209-3

First published in the UK in 1998 by
Spellmount Limited
The Old Rectory
Staplehurst
Kent TN12 0AZ

3 5 7 9 8 6 4 2

Tel: 01580 893730
Fax: 01580 893731
Email: enquiries@spellmount.com
Website: www.spellmount.com

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without prior permission in writing from Spellmount Limited, Publishers.

Editorial and design by
Amber Books Ltd
Bradley's Close
74-77 White Lion Street
London N1 9PF

Printed and bound in Italy by: Eurolitho S.p.A., Cesano Boscone (MI)

To Philippa

Picture credits

All photographs Christopher Ailsby Historical Archives except:
Novosti Photo Library: 108–109, 130–131
TRH Pictures: 2–3, 13, 14, 60–61, 76–77, 94, 98–99, 115, 138–139, 142–143, 160–161, 167
TRH Pictures via Espadon: 112–113, 148–149

CONTENTS

1 The Ideological War 6

2 First Blood 20

3 The First Winter 34

4 A Time of Trial 48

5 Triumph and Despair 60

6 Himmler's Foreign Legions 82

7 New Tactics for a New War 98

8 The Dirty War 108

9 Red Storm in the South 132

10 Fields of Glory 142

11 No Respite 152

12 The Black Guard Dies 170

Appendix 1 *Waffen-SS* Order of Battle 184

Appendix 2 Foreign Knight's Cross Winners 186

Appendix 3 *Waffen-SS* Ranks 188

Index 190

THE IDEOLOGICAL WAR

Few troops were more ideologically motivated than the men of the Waffen-SS, especially those who first fought in Russia. To understand their fanatical dedication to SS principles, one has to examine the unit's humble beginnings, and the development of the organisation, in particular its rapid growth and the ideological indoctrination received at the hands of Theodor Eicke and his colleagues.

In the early days of Nazism, Hitler was surrounded by the unwieldy Sturmabteilung (SA), mainly unemployed ex-soldiers who frequented Munich beer halls and were recruited by Ernst Röhm, friend of Hitler, to protect Nazi speakers. The SA bodyguards grew in number, and acted under Röhm's orders rather than Hitler's. Hitler realised that a more dedicated élite personal guard was necessary; not large, but consisting of men of proven calibre, Nordic blood and good character. With an unequivocal allegiance to Hitler, they would act as his bodyguard, protecting both him and important members of the Nazi Party, while they travelled the breadth of Germany furthering its cause.

In March 1923 the embryo SS consisted of just two men, Josef Berchtold and Julius

Left: Adolf Hitler, Chancellor of Germany, inspects an honour guard of the* Leibstandarte *in Germany in the late 1930s. To his right is Reichsführer-SS Heinrich Himmler.

Left: Members of the* Stosstruppe Adolf Hitler, *the forerunner of the SS. Formed in May 1923, it was commanded by Josef Berchtold. His task was to protect Hitler at all times and serve him unswervingly. The unit was involved in the abortive Munich Putsch of November 1923, in which Hitler made a farcical attempt to take over Bavaria.

Schreck, who called themselves the Stabswache , or 'staff guard'. Two months later a new unit was formed, the *Stosstruppe Adolf Hitler*, commanded by Berchtold. The *Stosstruppe* was involved in the disastrous Munich Putsch in November 1923, which ended in fiasco, with the arrest of the leaders, Hitler in prison and the Nazi Party banned.

Heinrich Himmler escaped prosecution and returned to Landshut, where he sold advertising space in the party newspaper, the *Völkischer Beobachter*. He found himself a local party official with command over the tiny SS in his district. Gregor Strasser was appointed Reich Propaganda Leader of the Nazi Party in September 1926, and Himmler accompanied him to party headquarters as his secretary.

In April 1925, Hitler ordered his chauffeur and personal bodyguard, Julius Schreck, to raise a new shock troop. A few weeks later it was named the Schutzstaffel, or 'Protection Squad'. The new SS was to be organised on a national basis: each major city was called upon to provide one leader and 10 of its best men, but by 1928 it had only 280 members. Himmler's organisational ability had not gone unnoticed, however, and he was appointed Deputy SS Leader and then Reichsführer, (National Leader) in January 1929, with the rank of SS-Oberführer. He commanded approximately 1000 men, and though the SS was still a part of the SA, Himmler gradually began to separate the two formations.

The growth of the SS

Overwhelmed by the large number of applications from ex-Freikorps (private armies raised after World War I) and unemployed middle-class volunteers, he introduced biological criteria and the concept of racial purity into new recruitment plans. The army, which perceived Röhm and his SA as a rival took a favourable view of the SS as a force. This, combined with Himmler's organisational skills, resulted in the growth of the SS. By 1930 it numbered 2727 men; in June 1932, when the SA was banned, the SS had grown to 30,000 or approximately 10 per cent of the SA's strength.

In the early 1930s, the political situation in Germany began to degenerate and take on the guise of near civil war. The Socialists and the Communist Party fielded armed militia, to which the SA and SS replied with force. Some 10 SS men were killed and several hundred wounded during the violent street battles with the Rötfrontkämpferbund, or 'Red Front Fighters' Association'. With the crucial 1933 elections approaching, it suited the Nazi Party

to create the illusion that the country was on the slippery slope to all-out anarchy, and that it held the key to the political problems that abounded. By 30 January 1933, when Hitler became Chancellor, the SS had secretly recruited 52,000 more members.

On 27 February 1933 the Reichstag was burned down. Rudolf Diels, head of what was to become the Gestapo, reported to Hitler that the alleged culprit, Marinus van der Lubbe, was in custody and that the fire was the work of a single demented pyromaniac. Hitler, however, blamed the Communists and burst out in fury: 'This is a cunning plot! Every Communist official must be shot. All Communist deputies must be hanged this very night.' Two days later Hitler issued a 'Decree for the protection of People and State', which gave police powers to the SA and SS. Some 25,000 SA and 15,000 SS men were issued with firearms and deployed as Hilfspolizei or 'auxiliary policemen'. Police presidents were able to take into protective custody anyone considered to be a political opponent in the broadest sense of the term. The Reichstag fire allowed Hitler to flex his political muscles. The party's left-wing protagonists began to be unceremoniously ushered into prisons and makeshift unofficial camps or 'wild man camps', so called due to the lack of supervision and the frightful stories of brutality which emerged from them.

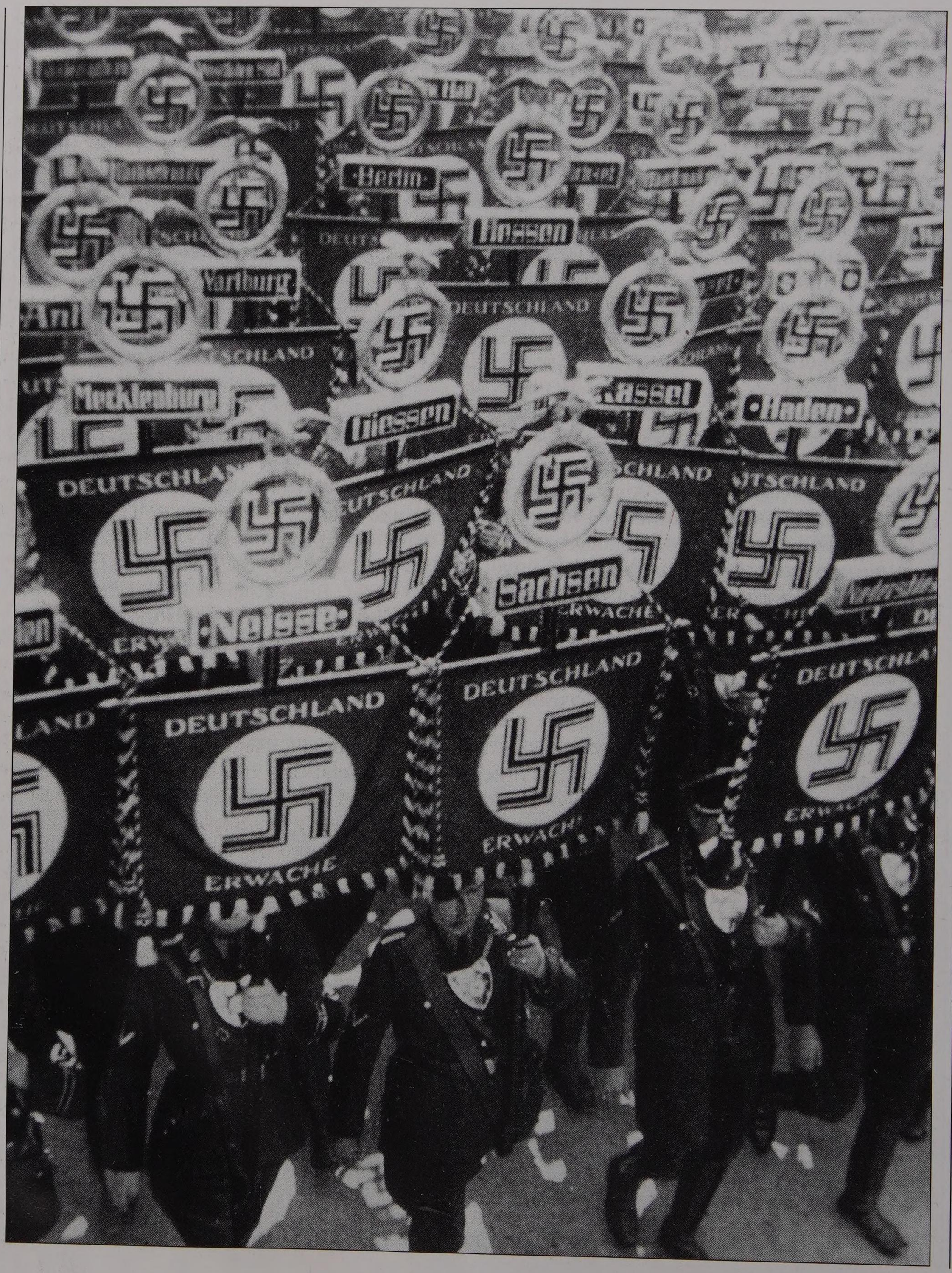
A decree on 26 April 1933 established the Geheime Staats Polizeiamt (Gestapa), which was later renamed Geheime Staats Polizei (Gestapo), as a new department of the Prussian State Police affiliated with the Ministry of the Interior, to be headed by Diels. The Gestapo (and Diels) became targets for the ambitious Himmler, who was desperate to control it.

'Night of the Long Knives'

The SS was divided into two distinct groups: the Allgemeine-SS – 'General SS' – which fulfilled a police function and was basically part-time, and the newly emergent Bewaffnete-SS or 'Armed SS', which was military in appearance and full-time.

The turning point in the struggle for supremacy over the SA was the assassination of its chief, Ernst Röhm, on 30 June 1934. A decree on 26 July recognised the part the SS had played in the purging of the SA and promoted it to the status of an independent organisation within the Nazi Party. Himmler set

Right: A rare photograph of the first SS volunteers, taken in 1925. In April of that year, Hitler had ordered his chauffeur and personal bodyguard, Julius Schreck, to raise a new unit. It was called the Schutzstaffel – Protection Squad – and initially numbered eight men. What was to become the most infamous organisations in modern history was thus born.


Berlin
Lüneburg
Lüneburg
Lüneburg

Left: Under Himmler's guidance the SS became an élite in Nazi Germany, which, in his own words, 'hesitates not for a single instant, but executes unquestioningly any order coming from the Führer'.

about implementing his theories of a racially and ideologically élite force, devoting his life to the expansion of the SS and giving it many facets. Himmler concerned himself with perfecting a future German élite through the SS. Not only would they be of guaranteed Aryan stock, but would be encouraged to form the new race through the Lebensborn network of maternity homes. The SS entered its second phase of rapid expansion, and by the outbreak of World War II the Allgemeine-SS numbered some 240,000 part-time members, who were kept in readiness in case of internal strife by a small regular staff. So many members of the Allgemeine-SS were called up for service in the armed forces or Waffen-SS, that many Allgemeine-SS units survived in name only.

Himmler's power spreads

Himmler became Polizeipräsident of Munich after Hitler became Chancellor in January 1933. This modest post enabled him to gradually gain control of the German police network, except in Prussia, where Göring was Minister of the Interior. But he finally achieved complete control in 1936. From the security point of view he took over the Gestapo, and made it a Europe-wide organisation. Himmler greatly admired Reinhard Heydrich's considerable organisational abilities, total ruthlessness, intense anti-Semitism and Nordic appearance. He realised that Heydrich's fear of being considered partly Jewish would be a means of controlling him. Through Heydrich and the Sicherheitsdienst (SD), the party's intelligence and security body, Himmler formed an intelligence service that covered both internal and external operations.

Heinrich Himmler's man of steel was SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS Theodor Eicke, who was to play a key role in the liquidation of Röhm and his supporters. Having refused to shoot himself, Röhm was dispatched by Eicke in his cell at Stadelheim prison at midday on 1 July 1934. That summer most of the unofficial camps, or 'wild man camps', were closed. The remaining SA camps were removed from the jurisdiction of the civil authorities and taken over by the SS. The first full-time SS Konzentrationslager, or concentration camp unit, was recruited from members of the Allgemeine-SS and was entirely under the overall command of the SS District South, who made it a depository for its unwanted personnel. The conditions that the guards lived under were little better than the inmates'. In June 1934 Eicke took command. He improved conditions, lifted the morale and discipline of his men and formulated service regulations for both guards and prisoners which remained virtually unchanged until the end of the war. In recognition, Himmler appointed him inspector of concentration camps and head of the SS-Totenkopfverbände in 1934.

The growth of the military SS

Within three hours of Hindenburg's death on 2 August 1934, Göbbels announced the fusing of the two roles of Chancellor and President. The only barrier between Hitler and unrestrained power had fallen, and he was now in the position to dictate and reward. In return for the services they had rendered on the 'Night of the Long Knives', the SS became an expanding state-sponsored paramilitary force and the army had to come to terms with this fact. The chiefs of the three branches of the Wehrmacht were officially advised on 24 September 1934 of the creation of the SS-Verfügungstruppe. It was to be made up of three regiments modelled on infantry regiments of the army, each to contain three battalions, a mortar company and a motorcycle company, as well as being supported by a signals battalion. It also provided for three officer cadet schools. The formation was to be under the command of the Reichsführer-SS, except in time of war, when it was to come under the control of the army.

Hitler decided that he needed a Praetorian Guard. The state protection provided by the

Reichswehr or police could not, in his eyes, be entirely replied upon. Without delay Hitler decreed that a new full-time armed SS unit would be formed, whose primary role would be exclusively to escort him wherever he was in Germany. 'Sepp' Dietrich, one of Hitler's closest associates, was entrusted with the formation of the unit. Hitler was later to describe Dietrich as 'unique, a man who is simultaneously cunning, energetic and brutal'.

Dietrich undertook the task with zeal, and by 17 March 1933 the embryo of a new headquarters guard named the SS Stabswache Berlin was founded. It comprised 120 handpicked volunteers, some of whom were former members of the *Stosstruppe Adolf Hitler* and whose loyalty to the Führer was unswerving.

Below: Theodor Eicke, Inspector of Concentration Camps and later commander of the* Totenkopf *Division. Tough, cruel and humourless, he indoctrinated his men with an unremitting hatred for everything non-Nazi.

Two months later, the unit was reformed as the SS-Sonderkommando *Zossen*, and enlarged with three training companies. The terms of engagement for the unit were expanded, and it could now be employed for armed police and anti-terrorist activities as well as the guard duties it already undertook. There was another metamorphosis during the next months, when a further three companies were formed as the SS-Sonderkommando *Jüterbog*. A rally was held on 31 August 1933 to mark the Nazi accession to power. Known as the Parteitag des Siegers, or Victors' Party Rally, it was a fitting occasion for Hitler to formally recognise the *Adolf Hitler* SS-Standarte and to dedicate the SS-Standarten, or regiments. This was formed from SS-Sonderkommando *Zossen* and SS-Sonderkommando *Jüterbog*. 'Sepp' Dietrich received the banner with the name 'Adolf Hitler' on the box that surmounted it. The two sonderkommandos were granted the honour and right to wear the name 'Adolf Hitler' on a cuff band on the left arm. The new formation was named the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler*.

Hitler's bodyguard

The ceremonial consecration was formalised in front of the Feldherrnhalle on the occasion of the Commemoration of the Munich Putsch on 9 November 1933. Here the members of the *Leibstandarte* took a personal oath of allegiance to Hitler, dispelling any doubts that these men were anything but his personal cohort. Himmler theoretically had control over the unit, but in reality the ultimate director of its function was Hitler. Guard Commander 'Sepp' Dietrich assumed an independence within the SS organisation for the *Leibstandarte* that no other unit enjoyed, provoking Himmler's complaint that it was 'a complete law unto itself'.

The *Leibstandarte* was used in the Röhm Putsch, and was employed in the arrests, with the detainees being reposited in the Lichterfelde Barracks. It was also instrumental in many of the killings. The number of executions undertaken by *Leibstandarte* firing squads is unknown, but it is reported that there were

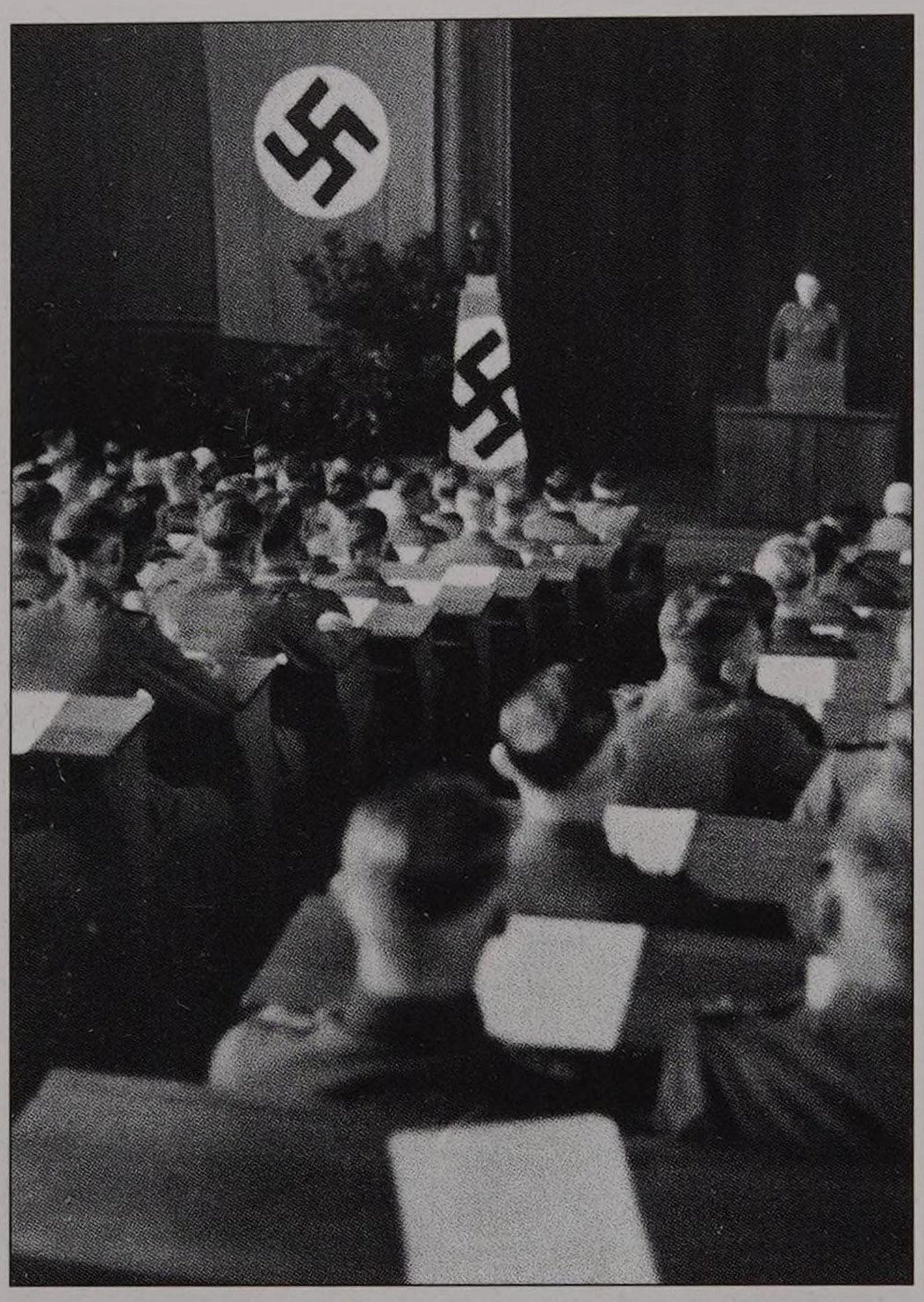
some 40 executioners employed. The *Leibstandarte*'s 'first blooding' was over when the shooting finally ended on 2 July. For their loyalty and involvement, Hitler promised Dietrich that the *Leibstandarte* would become a fully equipped regiment. The *Leibstandarte* was further honoured in early October 1934 when it became fully motorised. At this time, the Reichswehr in the main was still horse-drawn, and this decision led to hushed whispers of discontent in military circles. The Political Readiness Detachments were to be reorganised into battalions and then amalgamated within the *Leibstandarte* under Himmler's orders of 14 December 1934. The *Leibstandarte* now consisted of a headquarters, three motorised infantry battalions, one motorcycle company, one motor company, one signals platoon, one armoured car platoon and one regimental band.

SS recruitment

How were the recruits selected and indoctrinated in the SS generally, and the SS-Totenkopfverbände and SS-Verfügungstruppe specifically? Young university educated men, products of the national Youth Movement, were encouraged to join the SS. Many were motivated purely by power and a fear of a return to the chaos and instability of the inflation years. Predominately lawyers and economists, these men tended to gravitate to the SD or the SS-Hauptampt, which later became the Wirtschafts-und-Verwaltungshauptampt. Some volunteered for the fledgling SS-Verfügungstruppe, though a large proportion of the SS-Verfügungstruppe's officer cadres were middle-class soldiers who transferred from the Reichswehr, the small army Germany was allowed under the terms of the Versailles Treaty.

The officer classes were initially more difficult to persuade. Men from this background were unimpressed by the undisciplined rabble which comprised 90 per cent of SS membership in the early days. Revamping the SS with a new image of class and respectability required discreet political overtures to certain highly respected members of the old German aristocracy. Several prominent members, including the Grand Duke of Mecklenburg and the Princes of Waldeck and Hess, responded favourably. 'Cleansing programmes' resulted in the expulsion of some 60,000 men between 1933 and 1935, purging the SS of outright criminals, homosexuals, alcoholics, the 'professionally unemployed' and anyone who could not prove his racial purity. Standards were tightened for admission: racial purity, physical fitness, height and the lack of a criminal record became prerequisites for acceptance. At this

Above: Reinhard Tristan Eugen Heydrich, Himmler's deputy and probably the most ruthless individual in the Nazi Party after Hitler. During World War II he organised the Einsatzgruppen in the East.



Above: Students attending a lecture on Nazi ideology at the SS officer training school at Bad Tölz. The SS training schools were heavily influenced by the Inspector of the SS-Verfügungstruppe, the able Paul Hausser.

time, the *Leibstandarte* disbarred from its ranks men who had a single tooth filled. By 1938, 12 per cent of SS officers holding the rank of SS-Standartenführer or higher came from the military aristocracy.

Another group whose recruitment into the SS was actively encouraged by Himmler, with his quaint rustic ideals, was farmers' sons such as Walther Darré. He wrote a book in which he advanced his philosophy that the Germans were both farmers and warriors. He recognised no clear division between nobility and peasantry, believing that every free man was noble in essence, since he could bear arms. He felt that Nordism was on the wane in Germany, and he linked this with the decline among the peasants. He considered that it was fundamental to create a new nobility, composed not of individuals but of families. He thus intimately linked the concept of blood and earth. For him there was no racism without roots. The earth was not made solely to feed people, but also to provide them with physical and moral health. He summed up his ideas in a formula: 'The death of the peasant is the death of our people. It is not merely bread which grows in furrows; it is men also.' Darré considered Christianity to be an evil influence, which destroyed the original concept of Germanism. Himmler embodied these thoughts into SS ideology, and tried, but never succeeded, to make the SS a religious body. His anti-Christian policies deterred many men who would have volunteered and would have been found suitable. Under these conditions and the rigorous standards now employed, the supply of acceptable recruits began to dwindle.

Young blood for the SS

At the age of 18 a Hitlerjugend – Hitler Youth – could become an SS-Bewerber, or applicant. On the Reich's Party Day of the same year he was accepted as an SS-Anwärter (candidate) and given an SS identity card. After a short probationary period he took the oath of allegiance to Adolf Hitler. At the age of 19 or 20, depending on when his age group was called, he went into the Labour Service and then into the armed forces

He returned to the SS, still as a candidate, if he elected not to remain in the armed forces, as a regular or noncommissioned officer candidate after his two years' service. The candidate was given special philosophical training, the principles of the SS being thoroughly explained, in particular the marriage order and code of honour of the SS. Subject to fulfilling all the special requirements, the SS candidate was finally accepted as an SS man. At a special ceremony on 9 November after his return from the armed forces, he vowed that he and his relations would forever observe the basic laws of the SS. The newly ordained SS man was given the right to wear the SS dagger, and from that day forth it was his right and duty to

defend his honour, according to the code of honour of the Black Corps. He remained in the Allgemeine-SS on the active list until he was 35 years of age, when, upon application, he was placed on the SS reserve list.

The SS-Totenkopfverbände

Pre-war there were different qualification standards for the SS-Totenkopfverbände recruits and those of the SS-Verfügungstruppe. To join the *Leibstandarte* or SS-Verfügungstruppe, a recruit had to be at least 1.8m (5ft 11in) and later 1.85m (6ft 0.5in) tall and between the ages of 17 and 22. For the SS-Totenkopfverbände the height restriction was only 1.7m (5ft 7.5in) which was later reduced to 1.54 m (5ft 6.7in) tall and the upper age limit was 26. Neither organisation insisted on educational qualifications, and before 1938 40 per cent of SS recruits had only received what could be termed primary school education. Insistence on being able to prove their Aryan descent, in good physical and mental condition and to have clean police records was crucial. Himmler boasted in 1937 that 'we still choose only 15 out of every 100 candidates who present themselves'. Inevitably, standards had to be lowered to allow Himmler to continue expanding his empire. Gradually the religious standards, and those pertaining to height and physical fitness, were eroded, together with the all-important racial criteria. Service in the SS-Totenkopfverbände for noncommissioned officers and men was 12 years. Since this duty did not count as military service, Hitler ordered that volunteers be chosen from among those 'who, as a rule, have served their compulsory military duty in the army'. Most of the men recruited for the SS-Totenkopfverbände before the issue of the Führer Decree were youngsters aged between 17 and 19, and this practice did not altogether cease after 1938.

Theodor Eicke aimed to create a hatred for the churches as enemies of National Socialism by initiating a vehement anti-religious campaign in the SS-Totenkopfverbände, and many individuals who clung to their beliefs were victimised mercilessly. SS-Totenkopfverbände personnel were under intense pressure to renounce their religious affiliations, and a large number had officially renounced Christianity by late 1936. Eicke's efforts were often rewarded, by a legacy of unbridgeable rifts between parents and their sons. Political fanaticism, élitism and camaraderie were Eicke's key doctrines.

Eicke viewed the SS-Totenkopfverbände as an élite within the élite structure of the SS. This concept grew from the fact that the most dangerous political enemies of the state were incarcerated in the concentration camps and Hitler had given sole responsibility for guarding and running the camps to the SS-Totenkopfverbände. Eicke repeatedly pressed home his principles in orders, circulars and memoranda. The whole of the SS-Totenkopfverbände training was based on élitism, toughness and comradeship, together with a regime of ruthless discipline. The slightest infractions of SS rules brought harsh and often brutal punishment. Each month was split

Below: Felix Steiner, the progenitor of Waffen-SS tactics. A World War I veteran, he was instrumental in creating SS soldiers who were very fit, highly motivated and trained in the tenets of mobile warfare.

Left: SS-Totenkopf recruits relax in the heady days just before the outbreak of World War II. By this time the formations of the armed SS had superb élan, and their officers had been taught to lead by example, which often resulted in their high casualties during the war. This was all part of the ethos of the SS, a closed community with its rules and loyalties.

into three weeks of training, followed by one week of guard duty within the concentration camp. The training, both political and military, was designed to shape the attitude and colour the outlook of the SS-Totenkopfverbände man. Participation in camp guard duty gave him exposure to the prisoners and conditions in the camps. Eicke felt that this experience would underpin the lessons learned during his training, strengthening the resolve that the prisoners were inferior but implacable enemies of the German state. Eicke's fanaticism knew no bounds; the SS had to wage an unending struggle against these enemies. The SS-Totenkopfverbände's behaviour suggests he created an atmosphere conducive to indoctrinated political fanaticism, which gave rise to the excesses perpetrated later during the war.

Political training was divided into three broad areas. The first dealt with the history of the Nazi Party, and included an examination of the party programme. The second involved the history and racial beliefs of the SS, with special emphasis placed upon the SS-Totenkopfverbände. The third and most important part required a careful analysis of the enemies of National Socialism. In order of importance these were: the Jews, Freemasonry, Bolshevism and the Churches.

Theodor Eicke was appointed Inspector of Concentration Camps and head of the SS-Totenkopfverbände by Himmler in 1934. The inspectorate was established at Oranienburg, near Berlin, and the SS-Totenkopfverbände was enlarged and reorganised into five numbered sturmbanne, or battalions: I *Oberbayern*, II *Elbe*, III *Sachsen*, IV *Ostfriesland* and V *Thüringen*. In 1937 the five battalions were again reorganised, this time into three standarten which carried the designations *Oberbayern*, *Brandenburg*, and *Thüringen*. They were stationed in Dachau, Oranienburg and Frankenberg respectively. A few months later, Standarte *Thüringen* was transferred from Frankenberg to the Buchenwald concentration camp in Weimar. After the Austrian Anschluss a fourth regiment bearing the name Ostmark was established at Linz, later providing the guards for Mauthausen camp. From 1 April 1938, the organisation of the SS-Totenkopfverbände was fixed at: four standarten of three sturmbanne with three infantry companies comprising 148 men, one machine-gun company comprising 150 men, and med-

ical, transport and communications units. By the end of 1938 Eicke's men had all received some basic military training. When World War II broke out he formed a division from the Totenkopf units, undergoing military training at Obermünsigen Würtemberg during the winter of 1939.

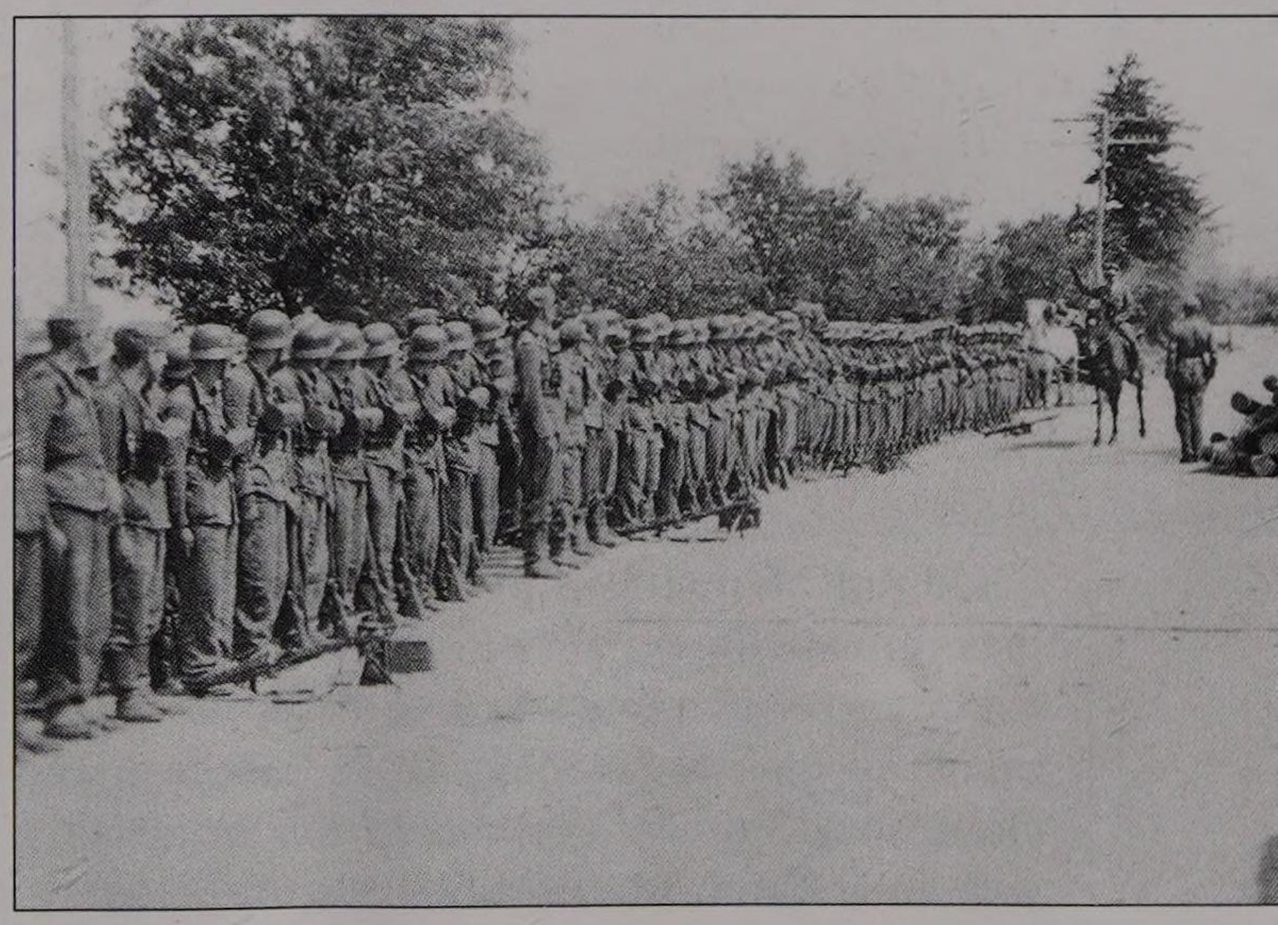
On 16 March 1935, Hitler announced to the German parliament that, in direct contravention to the Treaty of Versailles, he had reintroduced military conscription and officially established the SS-Verfügungstruppe. The intention was always that the SS-Verfügungstruppe would benefit from the highest possible standards of training available. Two highly regarded former army officers, Paul Hausser and Felix Steiner, were recruited for this purpose. Both were ultimately to become among the finest field commanders in the Waffen-SS. The SS-Hauptamt, or Main Office, established on 30 July 1935 was to organise all branches of the SS, and a special inspectorate of the SS-Verfügungstruppe was created on 1 October 1936 to supervise administration and military training. The new inspectorate had the objective of moulding the mainly ill-trained and far-flung units of the SS-Verfügungstruppe into an efficient fighting force.

Paul Hausser

SS-Oberstgruppenführer und Generaloberst der Waffen-SS Paul Hausser, who was to become known affectionately as 'Papa' Hausser to his men, was chosen as inspector of the SS-Verfügungstruppe, although he had only just been appointed inspector of the SS-Junkerschule (officer schools) at Bad Tölz and Brunswick. Once these two SS officer training schools had been established, he began attracting increasing numbers of former police officials and Reichswehr NCOs into the fledgling SS-Verfügungstruppe. Hausser readily accepted the responsibility for the organisation and training of the SS-Verfügungstruppe, which enabled him to formulate the directives and codes of practice it used. Few men had the same leadership qualities as Paul Hausser, and under his guidance the inspectorate fused the SS-Verfügungstruppe into a formidable organisation. Hausser remained inspector until the outbreak of World War II, when he took command of the *Das Reich* Division.

Felix Steiner

Felix Steiner was the luminary when it came to the actual training programme of the SS-Verfügungstruppe. He was 16 years Hausser's junior, with a charismatic personality. In 1935 he joined the SS-Verfügungstruppe and helped to develop the III Battalion of the SS-Standarte *Deutschland*, stationed in Munich, and the SS training camp at Dachau. He was promoted to command that standarte in 1936, instituting rigorous training schedules in application of his motto 'sweat saves blood'. In comparison to the staid and traditional army training, with its emphasis on 'square bashing', Steiner's ideas were revolutionary. He believed strongly in the creation of élite, highly mobile groups whose training put the emphasis on individual responsibility and military teamwork, rather than mindless obedience. He was diametrically opposed to the massed ranks of cannon fodder which still characterised most tactical thinking



Right: SS-Verfügungstruppe personnel on exercise 'somewhere in Germany'. By the time World War II broke out, the SS contained soldiers who were both fanatical and disdainful of death.

at the time. His ideas had been formulated and refined during World War I when he served as commander of a machine-gun company, witnessing the formation of 'battle groups' which had greatly impressed him. They were made up of selected men, withdrawn from the trenches and formed into ad hoc assault groups. Specially trained for close-quarter fighting, usually carried out at night, they wreaked havoc in their trench raids, employing individual weapons such as knuckle dusters, cluster grenades and entrenching tools sharpened like razors. The customary notification of an impending attack, signalled by an artillery barrage, was often dispensed with, heightening the enemy's fear and surprise as a result.

SS training

As their value became recognised, Steiner's reforms gradually filtered through the SS-Verfügungstruppe hierarchy. Along with his 'battle group' ideology, he promoted a very strict physical programme conjoined with a regime of cleanliness (even to ludicrous extremes). He structured recruits' days with a rigorous hour's PT beginning at 0600 hours, with a pause afterwards for breakfast of porridge and mineral water. This was followed by intensive weapons training, target practice and unarmed combat sessions. The day was broken by a hearty lunch, then resumed with a comparatively short but intensive drill session. The afternoon was then punctuated by a stint of scrubbing, cleaning, scouring and polishing, rounded off with a run or a couple of hours on the sports field. His men spent more time on the athletics fields and in cross-country running than on the parade ground, and developed outstanding standards of fitness and endurance as a result, enabling them to perform such feats as running 3km (1.87 miles) in full kit in 20 minutes, achievements which could not be matched by either army recruits or even members of the *Leibstandarte*. The training programme was interrupted three times a week by ideological lectures: in the classroom the recruits had to sit up straight with their hands on the table.

One recruit in three failed basic training the first time round. Successful candidates took the SS oath at a passing-out parade separately from members of the other SS branches, at 2200 hours during the annual 9 November celebrations. These occasions have been described as a 'uniquely holy event on which the venerated cadre of the survivors of the Munich Putsch silently re-enacted their march through the crowd-lined streets of the Bavarian capital in a bombastic travesty of the Passion Play'. The finale was the torch-lit oath-taking ceremony for candidates of the SS-Verfügungstruppe, which took place in Hitler's presence before the Feldherrnhalle and the 16 smoking obelisks, each of which bore the name of the first fallen Party Faithful. The oath was a major ingredient in the SS mystique, binding each successful candidate in unswerving personal loyalty to Hitler. During the ceremony a voice intoned the 16 names, and after each one a thousand voices chanted 'Hier'.

The SS brotherhood

The candidate now had to spend a year in one of the SS infantry or cavalry schools, before returning to Munich to swear another oath binding himself to obey Himmler's marriage laws. This was an attempt to replace the Christian rites of marriage, christening and death. Marriages no longer took place in churches but in the open under a lime tree, or in an SS building decorated with life runes, fir twigs and sunflowers. Proof of Aryan ancestry was required to protect racial and physical purity. The recruit became a fully fledged SS man; officers of SS-Untersturmführer rank and above were given the SS dagger.

To be eligible for a commission in the SS-Verfügungstruppe, officer cadets had to have served for a minimum of two years in the ranks, which initially meant in the Reichswehr. Officers enlisted for 25 years, NCOs for 12 and privates for four, with basic training being the same for all groups. Officers had to undertake an intensive combat course, which included tests of courage such as having to dig a foxhole in front of an advancing tank. More significant

were live firing exercises with machine guns, mortars and artillery.

One innovation introduced by Eicke and emulated by Steiner was designed to break down the rigid divisions between ranks which existed in the army. Officers and NCOs were encouraged to talk and mix with their men to get to know them as individuals. They competed in teams against each other on the sports field. Off duty they addressed each other as 'kamerad', rather than by rank.

Consequences of an ideology

On 17 August 1938, Hitler defined the *raison d'être* of the SS-Verfügungstruppe as being an armed force at his personal disposal, not a part of the armed or police forces. Therefore, it was able to be trained by the Reichsführer-SS in Nazi theories of race, and also to be manned by volunteers who had completed their time in the Reich Labour Service. The Führer's decree also stated that, in wartime, elements of the Totenkopfverbände would reinforce the SS-Verfügungstruppe. If mobilised, it was to be used firstly by the commander-in-chief of the army, making it subject only to military law and order, but still remaining a branch of the Nazi Party. Second, in an emergency within Germany, the SS-Verfügungstruppe would be under Hitler's control through Himmler. From these provisions emerged the first four of what were to become known in 1940 as the Waffen-SS divisions: the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler*, *Das Reich*, *Totenkopf* and *SS-Polizei*, plus the nucleus of a fifth, *Wiking*.

The consequence of their training was to dehumanise the troops. Ideological indoctrination convinced them that the Russians and other eastern Europeans were Untermenschen, or subhuman, who had no place in the National Socialist world. The Waffen-SS links with the Einsatzgruppen (Special Action Squads) was only a step away for units such as the SS-Totenkopfverbände in particular, whose training engendered a blind faith in the orders and ideology they received. All these factors would come together during the Waffen-SS's crusade in the East: the war against Russia.

Above: A pre-war SS-Totenkopf recruit, one of thousands of SS soldiers who believed that a war against the Soviet Union was the fulfilment of a dream: the beginning of the final battle against Bolshevism and Jewry.

FIRST BLOOD

Hitler did not regard the Nazi-Soviet pact of 1939 as a permanent feature of German strategic planning, a fact he never concealed from his generals. He advised his commanders in November 1939 that 'we can oppose Russia only when we are free in the West'. Russia 'is not dangerous' for the moment, he assured them. The victory in the West gave him the freedom of action he required to look eastwards. Britain was the only country unsubjugated, though militarily he chose to ignore or marginalise this fact.

The decision to attack the Soviet Union was a monumental one, equalled only by its rapidity. The failure to knock Britain out in a single stroke, combined with the temptation, the power and the sense of occasion, gave this Herculean step a structure and reality all of its own. Years of brooding and moments of intoxication thus fused fiercely into what General Warlimont subsequently called 'this ghastly development'. War with the Soviet Union was perhaps less baffling if viewed not as strategic or military rationality in the normal sense, but simply as Hitler's own brand of it.

Führer Directive No 21 was given on 18 December 1940, setting out the objectives of the campaign, planned to be launched in May the following year. This Directive stated:

'The bulk of the Russian Army stationed in western Russia will be destroyed by daring

Left: Grim-faced Waffen-SS soldiers aboard Krupp lorries towing 3.7cm PAK anti-tank guns during the early stages of 'Barbarossa'. The tracked vehicle is a StuG III.

Above: As 'Barbarossa' unfolded, the Waffen-SS began to display those qualities it would bring to the Eastern Front: ferocity in attack, steadfastness in defence, and a fanatical pursuit of the ideological struggle.

operations led by deeply penetrating armoured spearheads. Russian forces still capable of giving battle will be prevented from withdrawing into the depths of Russia. The enemy will then be energetically pursued and a line will be reached from which the Russian Air Force can no longer attack German territory. The final objective of the operation is to erect a barrier against Asiatic Russia on the general line Volga-Archangel. The last surviving industrial areas of Russia in the Urals can then, if necessary, be eliminated by the Luftwaffe.'

The battles in the Soviet Union heralded spectacular victories, but also ushered in brutality of unimaginable depths, with neither side giving or receiving quarter. The crusade was now launched under the codename 'Barbarossa', taken from one of the heroes of German history, Emperor Frederic Barbarossa, who marched with his knights at the close of the twelfth century against the infidel in the Holy Land. The Waffen-SS, the Third Reich's military and ideological élite, were to engage in a new quasi-religious kind of war based on a clash of ideologies. The war in the East was promoted as a Wagnerian struggle of the *Herrenvolk*, or master race, against the *Untermenschen*, or sub-humans, to bring about the subjugation of those the party despised most: the Jews, Slavs and Bolsheviks.

The weakened Red Army

The Soviet armed forces had been decimated by Stalin's purges (named after the most prominent officer executed, Marshal Mikhail Tukhachedsky). Between 1937 and 1939 Stalin carried out the systematic destruction of the Soviet High Command, the primary motive being to secure his position as absolute ruler of the Soviet Union. Few events had more effect on the Soviet Red Army of 1941: three out of five marshals of the Soviet Union, 11 deputy commissars of defence, 13 out of 15 army commanders, and all the military district commanders of May 1937, as well as the leading members of the naval and air force commands, were shot or disappeared without trace. The same fate was suffered by the political apparatus which was supposed to advise the professional soldiers. During those two fearful years some 35,000 officers were either dismissed imprisoned or executed altogether. This purge damaged the ability of the Soviet Red Army to resist the German invasion when it came.

The Tukhachedsky affair had supposedly been manipulated by Heydrich, aided by SS-Gruppenführer Dr Hermann Behrends and SS-Sturmbannführer Alfred Naujocks. The information gained helped colour the timing and content of Directive 21. However, Stalin's infamous secret police, the NKVD, had achieved what the German military command and Heydrich's secret service could never have done: remove the most effective commanders the Red Army possessed.

The Soviet Red Army, totally paralysed logistically and operationally by the loss of some of its most able men, had pitted against it 11 German armies, four of them panzer and three air fleets. On paper the odds appeared to be uneven, with the Soviet Red Army fielding 230 divisions totalling some 12 million men supported by 20,000 tanks and 8000 aircraft, against approximately three million German soldiers accompanied by 3330 tanks and 2770 aircraft. Crucially, however, the advance of the Wehrmacht was obstructed by only about 130 Soviet divisions.

The Waffen-SS units were deployed among the various Army commands. Field Marshal Gerd von Rundstedt, commanding Army Group South, was allocated the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler*, and the *Wiking* Division, which were with General Edwald von Kleist's 1st Panzer Group. Army Group South comprised five panzer divisions, three to four motorised, 21-22 infantry, six mountain and three security divisions, along with 14-15 Romanian, two Hungarian and two Italian divisions. It was an impressive force.

Das Reich was allotted to General Heinz Guderian's 2nd Panzer Group and formed part of Army Group Centre, which comprised nine panzer divisions, five motorised and 31-35 infantry divisions, as well as two to three security divisions, a cavalry division and the *Grossdeutschland* Regiment under Field Marshal Fedor von Bock,

The weakest of the army groups, Army Group North, with only three panzer divisions, three motorised, and about 20 infantry divisions, was commanded by Field Marshal Ritter von Leeb; it was also assigned the *Totenkopf* Division as part of General Erich Höppner's 4th Panzer Group. The *SS-Polizei* Division was part of Army Group North's reserves, while SS-Kampfgruppe *Nordland* and SS Infantry Regiment 9 were deployed as part of the Norway Mountain Corps under the command of Colonel-General von Falkenhorst, and were committed to the far northern sector of the front in Finland.

Army Group South was allocated the initial task of cutting off all the Soviet armies west of the River Dnieper. The capture of Kiev,

Right: The initial phase of the war in Russia witnessed colossal Russian losses. In the air, for example, over 3000 aircraft were destroyed, and on the ground the Red Army lost some 89 divisions. The Nazi war machine seemed unstoppable, and in the ideological vanguard was the Waffen-SS, imbued with a hatred of the 'sub-human' foe. It seemed the supermen were going to have another easy victory in Russia.

Kharkov and the Crimea were the territorial objectives, before pushing on to the River Volga and Stalingrad. This city was of incalculable psychological significance; once taken it left the way clear to the all-important Caucasian oil fields. In what proved to be an over-ambitious plan, a force of some 46 divisions was to drive east, comprising the 6th, 11th and 17th Armies with the 1st Panzer Group. The *Leibstandarte* Division was assigned to XIV Corps of the 1st Panzer Group.

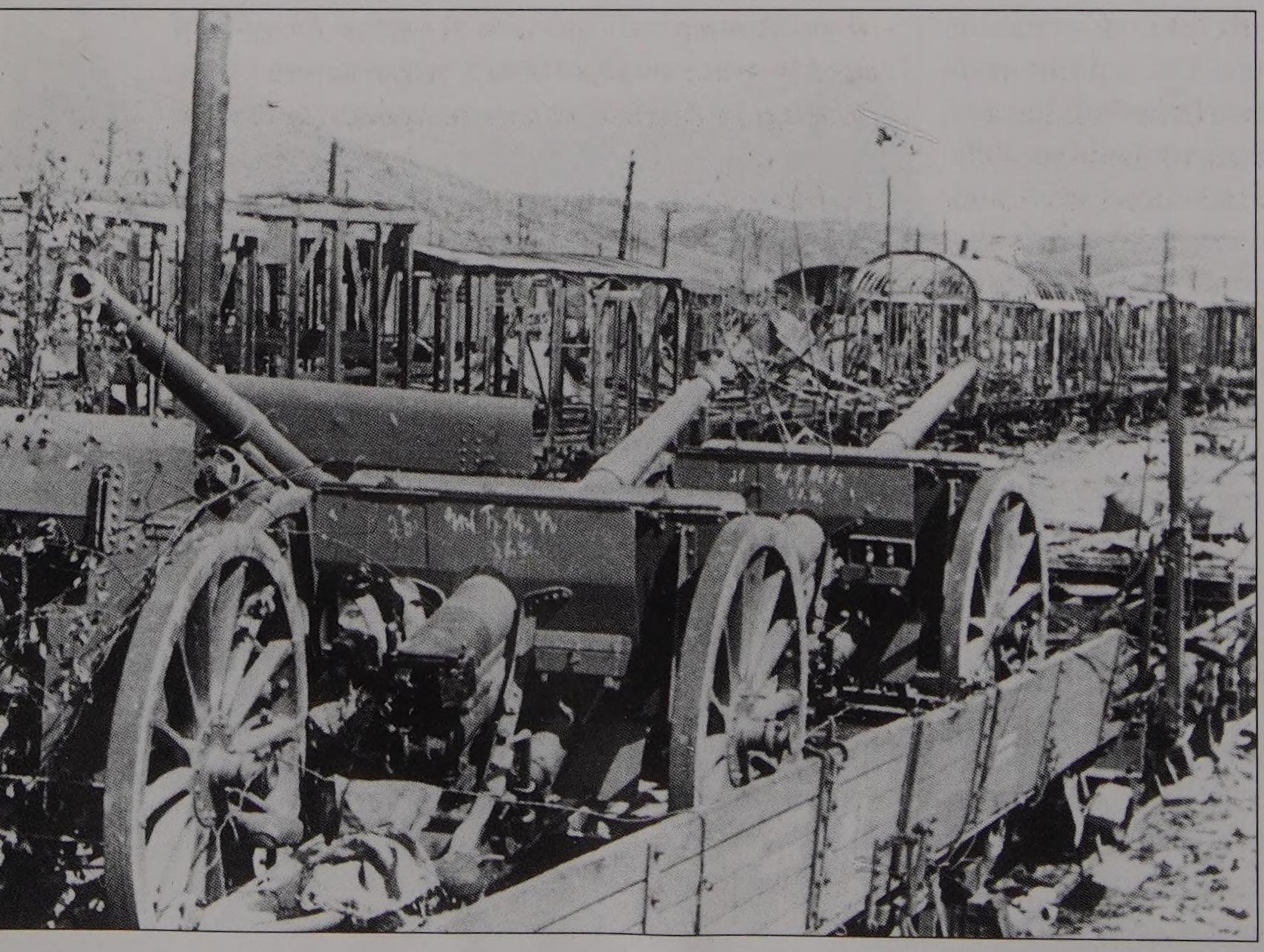
The 1st Panzer Group had the objective of breaking through the Russian lines south of Kowel and cutting off Soviet Red Army units to the southwest, restraining them until the infantry could eliminate them. They had to advance over 480km (300 miles) across difficult terrain. Hard metalled roads were not a common feature of the Russian landscape, thus speed was of the essence, as the packed dirt roads would be transformed into deep quagmires once the autumn rains started.

The Russians made full use of the natural obstacles of the Rivers Pruth, San, Bug and Dnieper, and deployed their lines of defences opposing Army Group South. Opposing it was a force of approximately 69 infantry, 11 cavalry and 28 armoured divisions under the command of General Kirponos and then Marshal Budyenni.

On the morning of 22 June 1941 at 0315 hours, what was to be hailed as the greatest continuous land battle history had ever witnessed erupted. The sudden flashes of thousands of artillery pieces seared the pale dawn, heralding the onset of Operation 'Barbarossa'. In this clash of Titans, the Wehrmacht was to wreak havoc upon the Soviet Red Army.

The Leibstandarte*'s war*

With the exception of the *SS-Polizei* Division, within the first few days of the campaign all the Waffen-SS formations under army command were in action (the *SS-Polizei* Division followed suit in early August). Russian troops bypassed during the main advance were dealt with by two brigades of Himmler's Kommandostab RFSS, SS Infantry Brigade 1 and the SS Cavalry Brigade, which were deployed immediately behind the front.



Left: Russian rolling stock carrying armaments and supplies after being hit by a Luftwaffe attack. A key part of the Blitzkrieg was the prevention of the movement of enemy supplies and troop reinforcements. The complete air superiority of the Luftwaffe during the early stages of 'Barbarossa' greatly facilitated the advance of army and Waffen-SS units on the ground, and hindered Soviet force deployments.

Above: Infantry of the* Das Reich *Division engage Red Army troops in July 1941. The division was part of Field Marshal Fedor von Bock's Army Group Centre. After heavy fighting in August, it was temporarily rested.

On 27 June the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler* was committed to battle, leaving its assembly area and joining the 1st Panzer Group reserves. It finally went into combat on 1 July, when it crossed the River Vistula at a point southwest of the town of Zamosc. The German pincers had extended deep into Soviet territory by this time, and General von Mackensen's III Panzer Corps had been cut off near Rovno. The *Leibstandarte* was allotted the first major task of the eastern campaign, re-establishing contact with General von Mackensen's III Panzer Corps, and was soon engaging Soviet tanks. While pushing through a densely wooded area two Soviet tanks attached themselves to a German column, mistaking it for a retreating Soviet unit. The column came to a brief halt just outside Klevan as night began to fall. The Soviet tank crews realised their awful error and broke away, speeding off into the night.

Klevan was quickly taken, and the advance moved on relentlessly. A few kilometres to the east of the town the forward elements of the *Leibstandarte* Division's reconnaissance battalion found an empty, blood-soaked ambulance beside an abandoned German howitzer. A few hundred metres away they discovered the corpses of several German soldiers, their bodies mutilated and their hands bound with barbed wire. Pronouncing that the Russians 'must be slaughtered ruthlessly', the Waffen-SS replied to the atrocity in like manner – a foretaste of horrors to come.

Such rapid progress was made by the armoured units attached to III Panzer Corps that great gaps began to open up between the widely dispersed German formations. The Soviets spotted these weakness and attempted to exploit them, attacking out of the Pripet Marshes to the north. The Soviets' primary target was the so-called Rollbahn, the main

Left: Soldiers of the* Leibstandarte *Division in the city of Tagonrog on 17 October 1941. The division fought superbly during the opening phase of 'Barbarossa', though by October its troops were suffering from a number of illnesses due to hard service in the field, including bronchitis and dysentery.

German supply route. If this could be cut, the advancing and vastly extended German units would be denied supplies of ammunition, food and fuel.

Zhitomir and Kiev became the objective of the 1st Panzer Group, which pushed forward with the *Leibstandarte* Division providing flank cover. Encountering frenzied attacks by Soviet forces supported by armour, the Waffen-SS soldiers defended themselves stolidly.

On 7 July, the *Leibstandarte*'s spearhead units breached the Stalin Line defences at Mirupol. Meeting stiff Soviet resistance, they pushed eastwards towards Zhitomir. The heavy rain that lashed the country rendered many of the roads impassable, forcing the Germans to strike out across country. The spearhead units were joined by the majority of the *Leibstandarte* at Romanovka as night fell.

The situation at the front was so fluid that it was not only Soviet units that strayed. One incident in particular illustrates how deep the penetration could be with regard to the parent unit. SS-Obersturmbannführer Kurt Meyer, who had already distinguished himself and his unit earlier in Greece, had left the main body of his battalion behind when he discovered that his small group had unwittingly passed through a gap between two Soviet units. Their infantry quickly surrounded Meyer and his troops, and then an officer stepped towards him. Meyer saluted, and the two men then shook hands. The Soviet officer was offered a cigarette which he gratefully accepted. The Soviets were under the illusion that Meyer and his group wished to surrender. Meyer perceived the confusion and in his inimitable manner demanded, via his interpreter, that it was actually the Soviets who should surrender. Walking among the Soviet soldiers he indicated they should lay down their weapons, while at the same time passing out cigarettes among them. The Soviet officer was not impressed or taken in by Meyer's theatricals. The ever-perceptive Meyer asked his interpreter quietly to play for time, as he hoped that other elements of the battalion would be arriving at any moment. The argument about exactly who should surrender to whom continued, with the Soviet officer becoming irritated. Just when it seemed that Meyer's bluff had failed, a German armoured car came into view came , only to be hit by a Soviet anti-tank shell. Another armoured car appeared and returned the fire. At this point Meyer screamed to his troops to open fire with everything, and a furious fire-fight developed. The balance shifted in their favour with the arrival of German armour, and the Soviets were neutralised.

The vital Keednov road junction stood just west of Zhitomir and was captured on 8 July by the *Leibstandarte* in a battle principally fought

by Meyer's battalion. His reconnaissance troops, supported by 8.8cm artillery fire, stormed across the River Teterev. The Soviets were proving to be more formidable opponents than the Germans had believed. They were masterful at exploiting the gaps in the German lines that were continually forming between the fast-moving armoured units in the spearheads and the slower-moving infantry divisions following behind.

The OKW, the High Command of the German Armed Forces, was of the opinion that Army Group South had, in essence, achieved its primary objective, and the bulk of the Soviet armies in the southwest had been destroyed. But the troops on the ground at the front did not share this optimism.

The Uman Pocket

Contradicting the OKW's optimistic viewpoint, a Soviet counteroffensive began with a thrust intended to cut off the main German supply route. Eventually the Soviet attacks were repulsed in what often became ferocious hand-to-hand combat, where knife, bayonet and entrenching tool reigned supreme. Casualties were heavy on both sides, with much of the fighting raging through wooded areas, and combatants were showered with lethal wood splinters when shells burst in the trees. Neither side knew exactly who was out-manoeuvring whom, or which side was gaining the upper hand. The *Leibstandarte* Division captured Shepkova on 9 July, temporarily relieving the enemy pressure and allowing the Germans to go onto the offensive.

On 10 July Hitler unexpectedly altered the attack in the south, from a push in the direction of Kiev, to a drive towards Uman. Hitler hoped to cut off and surround the Soviet armies at Uman, resulting in weeks of savage fighting in this sector. The *Leibstandarte* was allocated to XXXVIII Corps, and on 31 July was ordered to push against Novo Archangelsk to close the Uman Pocket. The Soviets threw their whole weight behind attempts to break out of the German encirclement. Their attacks sometimes comprised massed Soviet infantry formations supported by concentrated armour; the Germans were barely able to repulse them. The fearsome Nebelwerfer, a multi-barrelled rocket launcher which made a low groaning howl as it fired, was put to good use by the SS troops. The SS lines held firm, and the Soviet breakthrough attempts ultimately weakened. When the Uman Pocket surrendered, over 100,000 men were captured from the Soviet 6th and 12th Armies

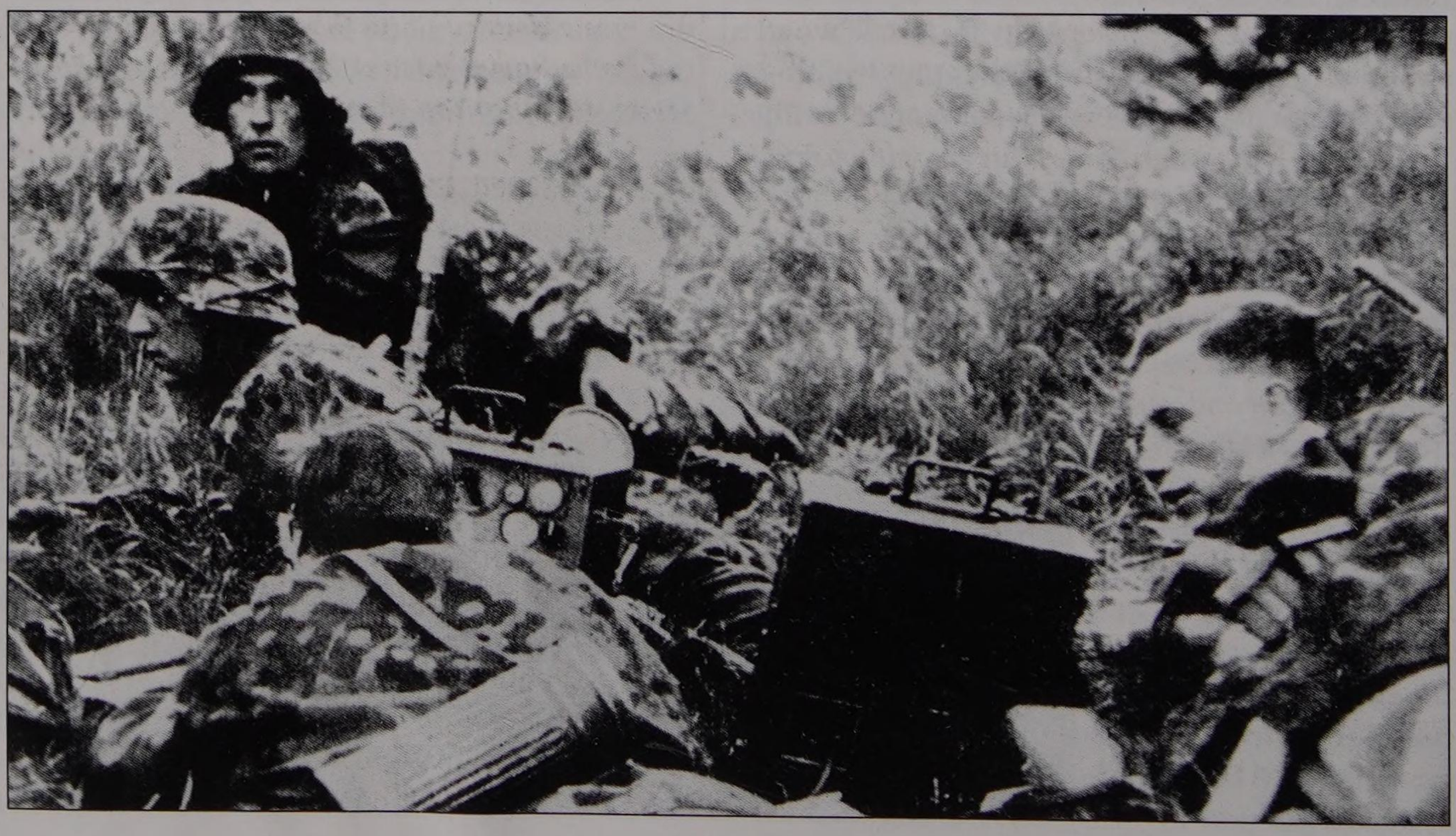
General Kempf expressed special praise for the contribution made in the Uman Pocket by the *Leibstandarte* Division: 'The *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler* has played a most glorious part

Right: The ruins of Stalino, which fell to the* Leibstandarte *three days after the division had taken Tagonrog. By November 1941, Hitler's bodyguard had travelled some 1600km (1000 miles) since the start of 'Barbarossa', though its supply lines were stretched as the end of 1941 approached.

in the encirclement of enemy forces around Uman. Committed at the height of the battle for the seizure of the enemy positions at Archangelsk, it took the city and the high ground to the south with incomparable dash. In a spirit of devoted brotherhood of arms, the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler* intervened, on its own initiative, in the desperate situation which had developed for the 16th Infantry Division on its left flank, routing the enemy and destroying many tanks. Today, with the battle of annihilation around Uman concluded, I wish to recognise and express my special gratitude to the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler* for their exemplary efforts and incomparable bravery.'

The *Wiking* Division, led by the *Westland* Regiment, moved forward on 29 June 1941 from its start point on the northern wing of Army Group South and advanced decisively through Soviet-occupied Poland. At Lemberg on 30 June, spearhead units encountered the Soviet 32nd Infantry Division. Considerable pressure was placed on the Waffen-SS elements by the numerically superior Soviet forces, and had to withstand repeated attempts to force them back. With the arrival of armour from the division's reconnaissance battalion, the balance finally swung in the Germans' favour, and they repulsed the Soviet counterattacks. The commander of the *Westland* Regiment, SS-Standartenführer Hilmar Wackerle, was fatally wounded by a single shot fired by a lone Soviet straggler while driving in his command car. His death was a great loss to the regiment. Lead units from the *Wiking* Division forced a crossing of the River Slucz at Husyantin, and together with other Waffen-SS troops were soon in the thick of the fighting on part of the Stalin Line defences. They met particularly strong Soviet forces, who counterattacked immediately. For a while the outlook for the Germans looked bleak. The fighting raged back and forth until the army's 1st Mountain Division arrived on the scene and relieved the beleaguered force. On 8 July the *Wiking* Division became engulfed in a torrential downpour while driving towards Kozmin, reducing the division's speed to snail's pace as

Below: A brief pause before the next assault. In Russia in 1941 the Waffen-SS was driven by an unshakeable belief in their Führer and the inevitable victory of Germany. Annoyingly, though, the Russians refused to give in.



the muddy roads were now no better than a quagmire. The divisional HQ at Toratscha was all but overrun, with the *Germania* and *Nordland* Regiments being engaged in bitter fighting. The *Westland* Regiment continued its push eastwards on foot, undertaking a four-day forced march through heavily wooded terrain to the River Ross. The *Wiking* Division had to pick its way gingerly through vast quantities of abandoned Soviet war materials and vehicles which littered the area. Control of the division at this point was taken over temporarily by III Panzer Corps, while the *Westland* Regiment was diverted south to Talnze to assist in closing the Uman Pocket.

Elements from the *Wiking* Division served from 7-16 August alongside the Luftwaffe's élite *Hermann Göring* Regiment, which was fighting to secure the northern flank of the 1st Panzer Group around Korsun and Schandorovka. To help contain heavy Soviet attacks, a battle group was also dispatched to Dnepropetrovsk from the *Westland* Regiment.

Blood bath at Zaselye

The 1st Panzer Group moved on when the Uman Pocket surrendered, renewing its advance in the direction of Bobry. The town fell on 9 August, when the Soviet defences crumbled and were overrun. Mainly cavalry units, the Soviets were no match for the Waffen-SS troops. The *Leibstandarte* Division moved on to Zaselye, which was quickly taken, although the Soviets immediately mounted a counterattack. Grimly holding on to its positions, the *Leibstandarte* fought for a week with the Soviets, who, with equal determination, tried to force them out. The attacks finally ceased on 17 August, with enemy losses totalling some 1000 men either taken prisoner, killed or wounded.

The *Leibstandarte*'s next objective was the large industrial city of Cherson, the first time the Waffen-SS infantry would be forced to storm a sizeable city in Russia. Cherson was defended by Soviet naval infantry who contested every street. Bitter house-to-house fighting inflicted heavy casualties on both sides. Soviet

Above: Kurt Meyer – 'Panzer-Meyer' – who as the leader of the* Leibstandarte *Division's reconnaissance detachment bluffed his way out of a Soviet encirclement during the early part of Operation 'Barbarossa'.

units showed the same degree of fanaticism and fearlessness in the defence of their homeland as the Waffen-SS displayed in the attack. After three days of fierce fighting the *Leibstandarte* took the city on 20 August, and earned a few precious days of rest and reorganisation in corps reserve. Then the division crossed the River Dnieper and struck out again across the barren steppe.

To the north, German units had established a small bridgehead over the River Dnieper at Dnepropetrovsk. This area had been home to a Soviet artillery school, and the entire district had been expertly plotted by its cadets. The Soviets had little difficulty in pinpointing German targets with accuracy and bringing

Right: The crew of a Waffen-SS 5cm PAK 38 anti-tank gun engage Soviet targets during 'Barbarossa'. As the Germans penetrated deeper into Russia, enemy resistance stiffened, and the weather deteriorated.

them under heavy concentrated artillery fire. *Nordland*, *Westland* and *Germania* crossed the river at the bridgehead, *Nordland* pushed north towards Mogila Ostraya, while the other two reinforced the units on the bridgehead's western edge. On 6-7 September they captured the heights at Kamenka, seizing over 5000 Soviet prisoners.

The Soviets mounted another surprise counterattack in an attempt to exploit the gaps between the German units, managing to penetrate 32km (20 miles) into German-held territory. In the hope of eliminating this new Soviet threat, the *Leibstandarte* Division was hastily brought back over the Dnieper. On 9 September the Germans took Novya Mayatschka, and the *Leibstandarte* took Novo Alexandrovka a couple of days later on its drive east.

Into the Crimea

Hitler once again changed his plans. Soviet troops had been withdrawing into the Crimea in large numbers. A narrow neck of land which had been heavily fortified and was well defended provided the only access. Hitler decided that rather than simply bypass the Crimea, this potential threat to the flank of the German advance had be eradicated.

The *Leibstandarte* Division made the first attempt to force its way through to the western side via the Perkop Isthmus. Deep minefields blocked its path, together with well prepared fortifications and the added problem of heavily armed armoured trains. As the Perkop Isthmus defences proved far too strong to be penetrated, the division's next assault point was the eastern edge of the Crimean 'neck'. There, under the cover of dense fog, it penetrated Soviet defences in a dawn attack. The division stormed past Balykov to capture high ground at Genichek. From their vantage point the Germans could see the Soviet troops preparing for a counterattack, and this allowed the Waffen-SS troops to implement their defensive strategy accordingly.

Having secured the entrance to the Crimea, the *Leibstandarte* continued to push eastwards on the Russian 'mainland' towards Melitopol. On reaching Rodianovka on 18 September, it dug in. The German positions became the object of numerous counterattacks which were successfully rebuffed. Subsequently, the Waffen-SS troops were moved westwards, to another crisis spot.

In the Crimea, the Romanian troops of LIV Corps holding a sector of the German lines endured vicious Soviet counterattacks and were virtually annihilated. Once again the Waffen-SS was in demand, with the élite troops of the *Leibstandarte* Division forming the mainstay of the German defence. By 30 September, the Soviet attacks had lost their head of steam and the 1st Panzer Group was able to continue advancing eastwards.

The *Totenkopf* Division was part of Army Group North and was commanded by Field Marshal Wilhelm Ritter von Leeb at the start of the campaign. On the left was Colonel-General Küchler's 18th Army, whose objective was to push east through Latvia and Estonia. In the centre, General Erich Höppner's 4th Panzer Group was to drive towards Leningrad. On the right, General Busch's 16th Army was tasked with giving flank protection.

Höppner's 4th Panzer Group's principal units were XXXXI and LVI Panzer Corps, with the 269th Infantry Division and, much to Eicke's disgust, the *Totenkopf* Division in reserve. This was Höppner's personal decision – he disliked both Eicke and his division.

On 22 June the 4th Panzer Group smashed through the Soviet border positions, its first objective being the key bridges that spanned the River Dvina. The river, which ran from Vitebsk to the Gulf of Riga, provided an excellent natural obstacle, but initial resistance was extremely light, and Höppner's troops were able to cover 80km (50 miles) in the first day alone. The 4th Panzer Group reached Dvinsk, nearly 320km (200 miles) into Soviet-held territory, on 26 June, having captured all the bridges over the Dvina. Outpacing the slower-moving infantry divisions, the spearhead units were then obliged to halt at Dvinsk so they could catch up.

The Totenkopf *enters the fray*

A considerable gap had appeared between the southern flank of General von Manstein's LVI Panzer Corps and the northern flank of its neighbour, the 16th Army. Soviet stragglers, cut off by the phenomenal German advance, remained active behind the German armies. The *Totenkopf* Division moved up to Dvinsk to join the main force of the group and was sent into action to mop up these stragglers. At first bewildered by the initial shock of the German attack, Soviet units gradually began to reorganise and reform. As the *Totenkopf* progressed, it found resistance stiffening.

The *Totenkopf* Division encountered particularly determined resistance on 27 June when moving through central Lithuania. A sizeable Soviet force with tank support stopped the division's reconnaissance battalion, its spearhead unit. Eventually the tanks were repulsed, but Soviet infantry attacks continued, mounted by fanatical, almost suicidal, soldiers. The Germans tried to keep up the momentum of their advance, but progress was significantly slowed by these assaults. The morale of the *Totenkopf* Division troops was dramatically affected, but despite their exasperation they managed to stave off the attacks. The Panzerjäger (tank-hunter) battalion, accompanied by one infantry battalion, was immediately dispatched to help repel the Soviet counterattacks on LVI Panzer Corps at Dvinsk. While the remainder of the division followed behind, the *Totenkopf* Division became part of von Manstein's LVI Panzer Corps on reaching Dvinsk. It was joined shortly afterwards by XLI Panzer Corps, followed by elements of the 16th Army.

A fighting advance

The *Totenkopf* Division's next assignment was protecting Manstein's flank and maintaining contact with the 16th Army in order to to prevent dangerous gaps opening in the German line. On 2 July the 4th Panzer Group resumed its advance suitably prepared. The heavily wooded marshland was ideal terrain for straggling Soviet units to defend, and proved extremely difficult for the *Totenkopf* Division, a motorised unit, to traverse. A well prepared ambush by the Soviet 42nd Rifle Division at Dagda caught the *Totenkopf* Division by surprise, killing or wounding over 100 Waffen-SS troops. With the arrival of Soviet reinforcements, supported by armour, the whole Waffen-SS division was brought to a grinding halt, and under the weight of frenzied Soviet attacks, was gradually forced back. The timely and welcome appearance of Luftwaffe Stuka dive-bombers the following day relieved the situation. They devastated the Soviet artillery and tanks, allowing the Germans to slowly regain the initiative. The advance got under way and the *Totenkopf* Division captured Rosenov on 4 July.

Above: 'Barbarossa' netted hundreds of thousands of Russian prisoners. These were a target for reprisals for atrocities committed against German prisoners, though some senior Waffen-SS leaders tried to prevent this.

The *Totenkopf* Division smashed its way into the Stalin Line on 6 July, and found the defensive network was particularly extensive in its sector. Heavy losses were sustained by the division, but it still forced its way through, establishing a bridgehead over the River Velikaya by nightfall. Fierce artillery fire rained down on the soldiers of the *Totenkopf* Division, and Eicke's command car hit a mine and he himself was wounded.

On 12 July the *Totenkopf* Division moved as part of the group reserve to Porkhov. A few days of welcome rest was all that was forthcoming, as LVI Panzer Corps had encountered trouble to the northeast of Porkhov, so the *Totenkopf*'s troops were sent back into action in support on 17 July. LVI Panzer Corps' flanks had again come under attack from the Red Army, and so Eicke's command was sent to fend them off. The *Totenkopf* Division was retained by LVI Panzer Corps, relieving the 8th Panzer Division, which went into reserve.

On 21 July the *Totenkopf* Division's advance began once again, moving through the dark forests and swamps of the region to the west of Lake Ilmen. The Soviets had withdrawn to a new defence position known as the Luga Line which ran along the Mshaga and Luga rivers. From 8 August the Soviets began a morale-sapping campaign, initiating counterattacks as soon as night fell. Rest in any form was all but impossible, as the *Totenkopf*'s troops had to use all of their efforts during the day to force the determined defenders back. A battle of attrition was underway. Soviet losses could apparently be made good without delay, while the Germans were unable to replace fallen troops. Partisans, who were already operating behind the German lines, had infiltrated the *Totenkopf* Division's rear areas. They had managed to tap into the field telephone lines, and from intercepted conversations were able to glean where the division's weak points were located, and planned their strategy of attacks accordingly. To add to their misery, the *Totenkopf*'s soldiers were mistakenly strafed by Luftwaffe aircraft.

Fighting without end

While the Soviet 34th Army was smashing into the German flanks in mid-August, a Nazi counterattack force was formed by combining the 3rd Motorised Division and the *Totenkopf* Division. The two German divisions surreptitiously worked their way around to the flank, and with devastating effect crashed into the unsuspecting Soviets. The 34th Army's shattered remnants were rounded up, along with massive amounts of equipment and vehicles. Numerous Soviet prisoners were taken, with over 1000 prisoners being snatched by the *Totenkopf*'s military police troop alone. With no

less than eight Soviet divisions destroyed, this had been an important victory for the Third Reich on the Eastern Front, though the attacking German units were significantly weakened by heavy overall losses.

On 22 August, the advance resumed as the *Totenkopf* Division crossed the Polist River and pushed eastwards towards the Rivers Lovat and Pola. For several days the drive continued almost unhindered, with prisoners being rounded up in considerable numbers. However, this situation did not last, as the retreating Soviets had dug in and were waiting for the *Totenkopf* Division to reach the Lovat. The Luftwaffe had switched its efforts temporarily to other areas, giving the Soviets the advantage of considerable air support. Attempts by the *Totenkopf* Division to force its way across the river failed. Powerful Soviet counterattacks forced the Germans to withdraw from the shelter of the woods near the river, giving cover to Soviet ground forces. In order to oust the Soviets from their well prepared positions, the *Totenkopf* Division renewed its attack on 26 August, suffering considerable casualties in the process – the highest recorded casualty rate in the corps at this time. The skies over the Lovat once again became the Luftwaffe's domain on 27 August, and it swiftly drove off the Soviet fighters and fighter-bombers.

Mud bogs down the Totenkopf

The *Totenkopf* Division's advance continued, with its reconnaissance battalion reaching the Pola River at Vasilyevschina just as the rains came. Almost immediately the division's vehicles were bogged down in the mud. The Soviets hit the *Totenkopf* Division with determined assaults, which it then spent two days desperately beating off. But all the time the advance was being slowed.

LVI Panzer Corps demanded that the *Totenkopf* Division press home its advance and cross the River Pola. These orders were received on 30 August by SS-Brigadeführer und Generalmajor der Waffen-SS Georg Keppler, temporarily commanding the battered *Totenkopf* Division while Eicke was recuperating. Seeing that his new command was in no fit state to attack such a well defended line, Keppler appealed to von Manstein, who agreed that the attack should be postponed for a few days. The Soviet attacks continued unabated, however, so there was to be no respite for the *Totenkopf* Division.

On 5 September the advance continued, but the Soviets had planted booby traps and peppered the *Totenkopf* Division's route with mines to slow its progress. Facing considerably stiffening resistance and ferocious Soviet counterattacks, the *Totenkopf* Division was once more forced onto the defensive by 12 September. It became clear that 'Barbarossa' would not defeat the Red Army. As the weather deteriorated, the Waffen-SS braced itself for its first winter in Russia.

Right: A motorcycle team of the* Totenkopf *Division in northern Russia in August 1941. The division had started the campaign with 18,754 men; by the middle of July 1702 officers and men had been killed or wounded.

THE FIRST WINTER

The German war machine that had smashed over the Soviet Union's borders and steam-rollered its way into her heartland during June 1941 had run out of steam by early December. The winter of 1941-42 was a hard time for the Germans in Russia. With the onset of colder weather the muddy roads began to firm up, and for a few weeks the German units were far more mobile. All this changed when winter proper set in.

On 10 October the *Wiking* Division was transferred from III Panzer Corps to XIV Panzer Corps. It advanced along the Melitopol-to-Stalino railway line towards Wolnowacha in order to overtake fleeing Soviet units and cut them off. Progress was slowed dramatically by torrential rain which, once again, turned the roads into seas of mud. For more than a fortnight the rain fell relentlessly, allowing the Russians time to reassemble their scattered units and regroup. The *Leibstandarte* Division reached Taganrog on 11 October after driving eastwards aggressively for almost 400km (250 miles) over inhospitable terrain. Having crossed the River Mius under heavy fire, it began the assault on the city. After six days of continuous and heavy fighting, Taganrog was taken, and three days later Stalino succumbed. At the beginning of November 1941, the *Westland* Regiment was subjected to a savage barrage from Russian Katyusha rockets, which

Left: A Panzer Mk III and Waffen-SS soldiers during Operation 'Typhoon', the attack on Moscow. The first winter in Russia came as a shock to Wehrmacht and Waffen-SS alike.

Above: German troops in Rostov in November 1941. The capture of this communications centre was facilitated by the* Leibstandarte's *panzergrenadier regiment, which seized a vital crossing over the River Don.

had a shattering psychological effect on the Waffen-SS troops. A salvo of these projectiles landed among unprepared and unprotected infantry units, causing near panic.

When the majority of III Panzer Corps had caught up with the spearhead units the assault on Rostov began in mid-November. The capture of this essential communications link by the *Leibstandarte* Division was assured when it took a vital bridge over the River Don. Soviet engineers had mined the rail bridge with demolition charges, but it was still intact. Its imminent destruction, it appeared, was being considered by Soviet engineers. Seeing a locomotive standing by the bridge with a full head of steam, SS-Hauptsturmführer Springer, commanding the 3rd Company, SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment of the *Leibstandarte* Division, ordered his men to open fire with every weapon available, peppering the engine and releasing high-pressure steam from countless holes. The ensuing confusion provided the cover required to storm the bridge. Springer and his men went on to remove the demolition charges, ensuring the bridge's safety. The Soviets made frenzied but futile attempts to dislodge the Waffen-SS troops, who held on tenaciously until reinforcements arrived. Springer was awarded the Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross on 12 January 1942 for this action.

During the Russian summer the German troops had endured scorching heat and choking dust, followed by torrential rain which made roads into impassable rivers of mud. But nature had stored up the worst horror of all: the full fury of the Russian winter. As the temperature began to plummet, the Germans were caught totally unprepared. No warm winter clothing was forthcoming, and they had to face the winter in summer uniforms. The mechanisms of their guns began to freeze, while vehicles had the oil in vehicle engines and sumps solidified. To thaw their vehicle engines, small fires had to be lit under them. But worse was the moisture which formed in the barrels of the machine guns and turned to ice, which split the barrels when they were fired.

Fresh objectives

The Soviets encountered fewer problems with the winter weather as they were better prepared and had an abundance of fur-lined winter clothing for their troops. To a great extent the Russian weather conditions determined the design of their vehicles, which were able to function when the cold weather rendered German vehicles all but useless.

Numerous senior army commanders had praised the *Leibstandarte* Division during this first phase of the war on the Eastern Front. They applauded both the offensive and defensive actions it had been involved in. Reichsführer-SS Heinrich Himmler was to receive an unsolicited letter from General von Mackensen in which he described the *Leibstandarte* Division as 'a real élite unit'.

The *Wiking* Division had bean allotted a new objective, Schachty, which lay farther to the north and had to be taken before winter finally closed in. The advance began on 5 November 1941, though a brief unexpected thaw turned the roads into swamps. In order to reach the road to Astoahowo the River Mius had to be crossed, and the Waffen-SS troops

Right: SS-Hauptsturmführer Heinrich Springer, who was awarded the Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross for leading the assault which captured the crossing over the Don in the face of heavy Russian fire.

struggled towards the higher ground in the direction of Perwomaisk-Oktjabrisk. The conditions became so bad that the troops were obliged to disembark. Instead of trucks carrying the troops, they had to push the trucks through the thick mud.

In an area between the 14th and 16th Panzer Divisions, the German forces had become very dangerously overstretched. They reached Oktjabrisk on 7 November, and the division sent a battle group south into the gap. Soviet units constantly probed the German positions during this period, attempting to find their weak spots. As a result, *Germania* seemed to be in almost constant combat, while the Waffen-SS troops doggedly attempted to thrust forward. Meanwhile, *Nordland* continued northeast, advancing towards Alexandrovka.

Soviet resistance was hardening. T-34 tanks were being deployed in ever-increasing numbers, and the German tank crews and anti-tank gunners were amazed by their tenacity. Until then, anything in their path had been swept aside. During the opening phase of the campaign they had encountered mainly obsolete light, thinly armoured vehicles such as the BT-5, which had easily succumbed to the Germans. The T-34 was a tank to be feared: fast, reliable, well armoured and with a powerful 76mm gun. Unless used at extremely close

ranges, the 3.7cm anti-tank guns which equipped most German units in 1941 proved ineffective against them.

XIV Panzer Corps was forced onto the defensive when it was subjected to a counter-attack by powerful Soviet forces on 23 November. The SS infantry were without adequate winter clothing, and with sub-zero temperatures many of them were soon crippled by frostbite. Conditions generally were worsening, and the Soviet 9th and 37th Armies gradually pushed the SS back to defensive positions on the River Tusloff. With inadequate troops to defend the many loops of the river the Germans were forced to withdraw, unable to hold their positions. They fell back west to the River Mius and dug in around Amurosjewka.

Left: Fierce fighting rages on the outskirts of Rostov in November 1941. When the city fell, some 10,000 Russian troops went into German captivity, most never to see their homeland again.

By the middle of the month, the *Totenkopf* Division had been assigned the job of clearing the Soviet stragglers in the forests north of Demyansk. Eicke returned to the front, where he resumed command of the *Totenkopf* Division on 21 September, in time to learn that intelligence predicted a major Soviet thrust in that area. Soviet strength was bolstered by the arrival of fresh units. Probing attacks assessed the strength of the *Totenkopf* Division, then at noon on 24 September the offensive began in earnest. Soviet infantry with armoured support began to smash the German lines. In reply the *Totenkopf* Division's artillery, firing over open sights, discharged round after round of high explosive. The Waffen-SS anti-tank gunners knocked out nine enemy tanks. By the close of day the *Totenkopf* Division's troops had forced the Soviets back out of Lushno. For Eicke and his men the outlook seemed bleak, however, as the attacks continued unabated and were pressed home with even greater ferocity on 26-27 September. The equivalent of three divisions, supported by 100 tanks, was now pitted against the *Totenkopf* Division. Its plight was such that Eicke, accompanied by all his staff officers and other non-combatant personnel joined their comrades in the fight in the trenches. Weakened, but demonstrating almost superhuman efforts, the *Totenkopf* Division repeatedly threw back an attacking force three times its own strength. As a result the Soviet attacks eventually petered out.

The phenomenal determination of the soldiers of the *Totenkopf* Division when faced with such overwhelming odds, together with the *esprit de corps* of the SS, was demonstrated many times. SS-Unterscharführer Fritz Christen was a gunner with the 2nd Company SS-Anti-tank Detachment of the *Totenkopf* Division. His battery, located just north of Lushno, took the full brunt of the first Soviet armoured assault on the morning of 24 September 1941. Christen was the only mem-

Left: As the train travels farther east into the Soviet Union, this Waffen-SS NCO grabs some sleep. The vast expanses of Russia came as a nasty shock to the average German frontline soldier. This resulted in depression engendered by the realisation of Russia's vastness. For the Waffen-SS divisions in the East, though, this sentiment came second to the savage thirst for winning the ideological struggle against the hated Jewish-Bolshevik enemy.

ber of the battery to survive, but he stayed at his post firing feverishly until he had driven off the attacking tanks, and destroyed six. Christen remained alone in the emplacement for the next two days. He repeatedly repulsed Russian infantry and tank attacks with his 50mm cannon while exposed to a continual hail of artillery, mortar and machine-gun fire. Christen hung on grimly, cut off completely from the rest of his unit and the division. He refused to abandon his post, carrying shells to his gun from the disabled batteries around him during the hours of darkness, and blazing away at enemy infantry and tanks at dawn. On 27 September the Russians were finally driven out of Lushno, and his astonished SS comrades found him still crouched behind his anti-tank cannon. In 72 hours he had killed nearly 100 enemy soldiers and knocked out 13 Soviet tanks. He was awarded the Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross, the first and also the youngest enlisted man from the ranks of the Waffen-SS to be so honoured. He was flown to Hitler's HQ at Rastenburg and received the decoration from the Führer himself.

The war of attrition

On 8 October the *Totenkopf* Division resumed its march eastwards towards the Waldai Heights with the objective of pursuing the retreating Soviets. Samoskye, set amid densely wooded terrain, had well constructed defences 10km (6.26 miles) deep in places. The *Totenkopf* Division and the 30th Infantry Division launched an offensive on 19 October which almost immediately foundered. Both divisions were soon on the defensive, when the Soviets launched frenzied attacks in retaliation.

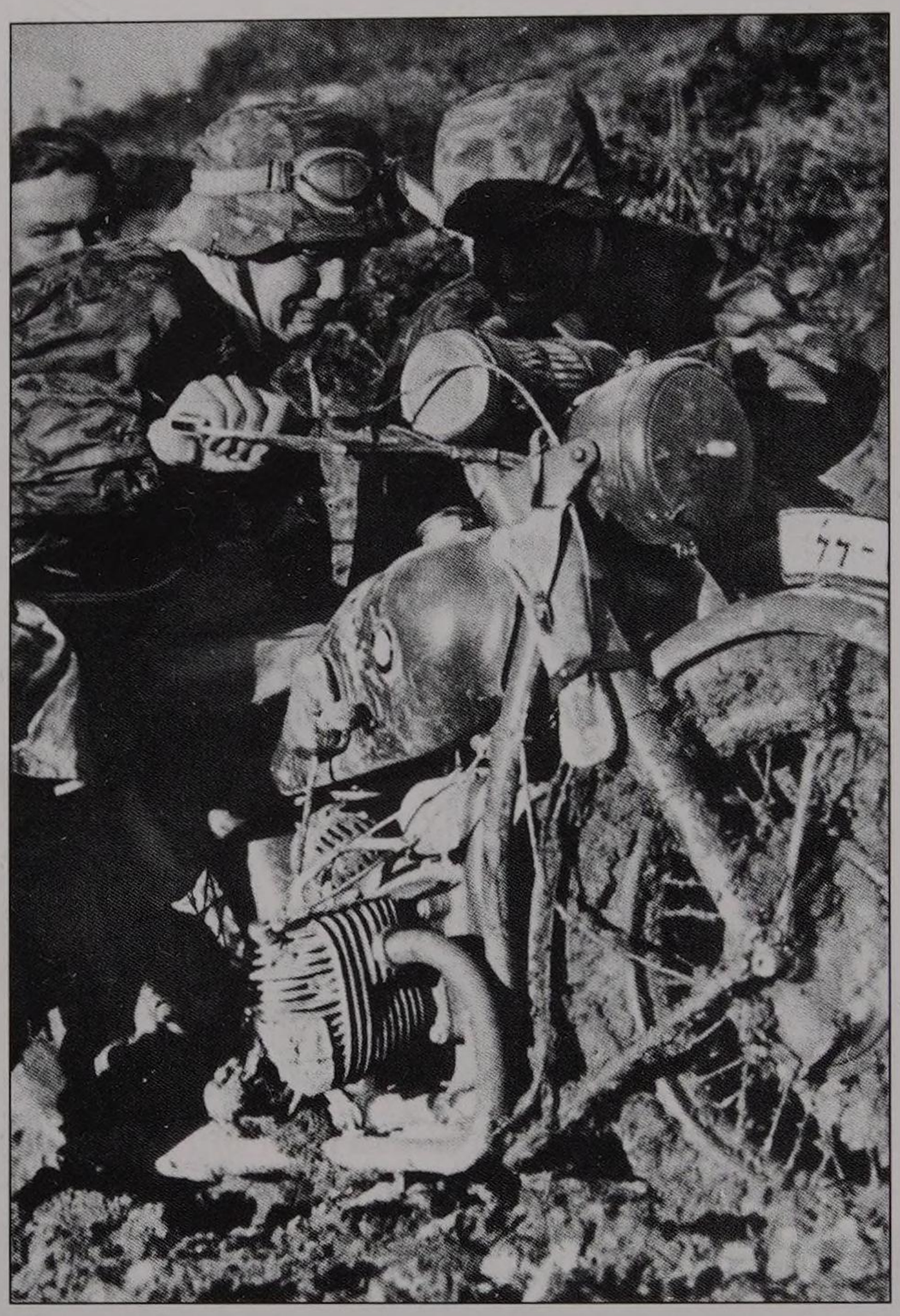
Almost 9000 men had been lost by the *Totenkopf* Division alone since the start of the campaign. It soon became clear, particularly with the onset of winter, that most other German divisions would be unable to progress any further in their weakened state. The decision was therefore taken to dig in, and the Germans spent the rest of the year holding off Red Army attacks and fighting partisans in the rear areas.

Above: A wounded Waffen-SS soldier is evacuated by his comrades. By mid-November 1941, the Waffen-SS had lost 407 officers and 7930 men killed in Russia, plus a further 816 officers and 26,299 men wounded.

Army Group Centre included the 4th and 9th Armies and the 2nd and 3rd Panzer Groups. The *Das Reich* Division was allocated to General Heinz Guderian's 2nd Panzer Group, serving together with the army's 10th Panzer Division and the élite *Grossdeutschland* Regiment in XLVI Panzer Corps.

The *Das Reich* Division was not committed to the fray in the first few days of the campaign, but on 28 June it was tasked with forcing a river crossing between Citva and Dukova. *Das Reich* was then to guard the northern flank of the German advance along the main road from Minsk to Smolensk. The division's engineers had constructed a temporary bridge over the River Beresina, which *Das Reich* had crossed by 4 July.

The contribution of the Waffen-SS engineer units in the early phases of the campaign in the East cannot be overstated, and enabled the



Above: SS-Oberscharführer Leo Wilm of the* Totenkopf *Division negotiates his motorcycle through thick mud as Army Group North heads for Leningrad. The poor weather slowed the advance to a crawl.

Waffen-SS to achieve incredible progress. Without the efforts of these men constructing temporary bridges, clearing mines and other obstacles, often under heavy fire, it would simply not have been possible for the SS units to maintain their astonishing rate of advance. While the armoured or infantry units won all the glory, their comrades in the engineers were unrewarded, but in combat attrition terms their missions were no less hazardous or costly. An illustration of the situations these units endured occurred while the 2nd Company of the engineer battalion, *Das Reich* Division, was repairing a bridge over the River Pruth. Ambushed by Soviet forces, 72 of its troops were killed and the company all but wiped out.

The small town of Yelnya, situated on the River Desna, had an important road junction which stood on the high ground to east. Advancing along the main Minsk-Moscow road *Das Reich* set off on 22 July to take this objective. The assault was made by the *Deutschland* and *Der Führer* Regiments, together with armour from the 10th Panzer Division. *Deutschland*, supported by army tanks, was on the left wing, and *Der Führer* was on the right without the benefit of artillery support. It made the initial attack and secured the first ridge of the heights by nightfall. By the end of the day good progress had been made by *Der Führer*, which had penetrated Soviet lines.

On the defensive

On the following day the Soviets relinquished the high ground after the Germans continued their push. The Germans were considerably weakened, as much by climactic conditions as by losses. A searing-hot sun relentlessly beat down from an unforgiving sky, baking the terrain. There was little shade and supplies of water were low. Corps headquarters realised that these units could not be expected to continue the advance against stiffening enemy resistance, given their weakened state. The Waffen-SS troops were allowed to go temporarily onto the defensive. Vicious Soviet counterattacks soon followed, which the SS infantrymen were hard pressed to repulse, proving that HQ's decision was correct.

When the German positions were penetrated, fierce hand-to-hand fighting often occurred as it was the only means of driving out the Soviets. Before the Waffen-SS troops regained complete control, positions changed hands two or three time in some instances. When their ammunition began to run low, only clearly defined targets were fired upon by the Waffen-SS gunners. The attacks eventually subsided, and it was possible to relieve the Waffen-SS troopers. In the second week of September, *Das Reich* was moved south to participate in the drive to Kiev. It was still part of the 2nd Panzer Group and had been tasked with operating on the right flank of XXIV Panzer Corps.

During the opening phases of Operation 'Barbarossa', the advance through Russia had been marked by the rapid progress achieved by the German forces both to the north and south of the great Pripet Marshes. They were a formidable natural obstacle and formed a huge salient into German-held territory by September. At least five Soviet armies, comprising around 50 divisions, were within the salient. In a massive pincer movement they had to be cut off and destroyed. The southwest end of the salient was to be attacked by the 6th Army, which was to swing up and draw out the Soviet armies defending that area. In the north, the 2nd Army with the 2nd Panzer Group, and in the south the 17th Army with the 1st Panzer Group, would form the arms of a great pincer, trapping the Soviet armies when it closed to the east of Kiev.

Das Reich *crosses the Desna*

During the rapid drive south, the *Das Reich* Division was ordered to take the vital bridge that spanned the River Desna at Makoshim, with air support from the Luftwaffe's Stukas. On reaching the approaches to the river, *Das Reich* could see that the opposite bank was well defended. The Waffen-SS commanders awaited their air support in vain and then decided to attack without it. Motorcycle troops from the reconnaissance battalion made a high-speed dash over the bridge, taking the defenders completely by surprise and engaging them in close combat. Meanwhile, the wires to the demolition charges were frantically being cut by other units on the bridge. The Germans captured the bridge completely intact. While the SS troops were securing their bridgehead against potential counterattacks, the Luftwaffe arrived and began to dive-bomb the bridge, killing 40 Waffen-SS soldiers.

Das Reich vacated the bridgehead over the River Desna, to begin driving south in the direction of Priluki, Borsna and the crossings over the River Uday. On 15 September Kiev was completely encircled, the SS infantry having successfully seized their previous objectives. The Soviet Red Army units made desperate attempts to break out of the encirclement, but the Germans beat back all of their frantic efforts. Losses in the Kiev Pocket amounted to a staggering one million Soviet troops either killed or captured.

On 4 October the attack on Moscow, codenamed Operation 'Typhoon', began. Initially progress was excellent, but with the arrival of the autumn rains *Das Reich* and the 10th Panzer Division were rapidly bogged down, only reaching Gzhatsk on 9 October. Temperatures plummeted dramatically, producing the first of countless frostbite cases. The Russian winter was now a major factor in the war, as the troops were wholly inadequately protected against it. By mid-October, meeting fierce resistance, *Das Reich* was on the move again, pushing along the main road to Moscow. On 18 October, after crossing the River Moskva, the town of Mozhaisk fell to the Waffen-SS division.

The Germans concentrated on consolidating their hard-won gains during late October until

Below: In Russia the wet season usually began during October and lasted for a month. Roads disappeared and men and horses sank in a sea of mud. Horses died from heart strain brought on by hauling kit through mud.

Above: When the winter began in earnest the ground froze over, allowing the movement of vehicles. These German tanks are heading for Moscow during 'Typhoon', in which elements of* Das Reich *reached the city's outskirts.

mid-November. Supplies of ammunition were running low and weather conditions worsened. XLVI Panzer Corps was ordered to continue its advance on 18 November, making a thrust towards Istra. After fierce fighting, the town was finally penetrated on 26 November by the remaining tanks of the 10th Panzer Division and *Das Reich*.

The division still hoped to push on towards Moscow itself, but with every day that passed, the weather conditions became more severe. Both the *Deutschland* and *Der Führer* Regiments had to be regrouped because of the great loss in manpower: one battalion from each was disbanded and the men redistributed. The freezing temperatures were not just taking a toll on men, vehicles suffered too. All but seven of the tanks of the 10th Panzer Division, for example, had been rendered inoperable by the arctic conditions.

The great German assault against Moscow in the first dreary days of December marked the high watermark of German achievement in Russia. Momentum ground inexorably and slowly to a standstill. Due to six months of continuous fighting, mounting casualties, horrendous weather and supply lines which were over stretched, the Germans were close to the brink of collapse. Although the very gates of Moscow itself had been rattled by the Germans, the Soviet Red Army, despite having been pushed far back, was able to establish a reserve to the east of the Soviet capital. The troops of the *Das Reich*'s reconnaissance battalion reached the Moscow city tramcar terminus on 4 December 1941, before the weather closed in and forced a halt in the attack. This was to be the farthest point reached in the assault on Moscow. On 6 December 1941, 17 Soviet armies, around one and a half million Soviet troops, hurled themselves against an exhausted German force. The Soviet winter

offensive had begun. The order to retreat was given on 9 December, and as the long weary trek westwards started, the *Das Reich* Division was forced to retire.

The winter's first blizzard numbed the Germans, who now found themselves locked in the deadly embrace of the first major Soviet counteroffensive. The Russians tore huge gaps in the front when they smashed into the German lines. The *Totenkopf* Division, together with five other German divisions, found itself imprisoned in what was soon to be called the Demyansk Pocket.

White nightmare at Demyansk

On 5 December Marshal Zhukov was poised to unleash the Red Army's fresh, well equipped divisions against Army Group Centre. The lines buckled and the exhausted German soldiers began to crack almost immediately. A withdrawal to Smolensk was favoured by the German frontline generals, in the hope of forcing the Red Army to fight in deep snow at the end of a long supply line. However, Hitler was adamant that every German soldier was to stand firm, and he bluntly refused to countenance any other tactic. Any form of withdrawal whatsoever was out of the question. Hitler's orders were not to be disregarded, and those senior officers who did found themselves quickly demoted and transferred. Those who would obey without question were placed in charge. Hitler's inflexibility helped to avert a total rout of the German armies before Moscow, and the German defences gradually firmed up. The front stabilised by the end of January in the central sector, where the Soviet offensive had exhausted itself. However, Hitler's view of never countenancing retreat would take the lives of countless thousands of German soldiers in the following years. His determination to defend what were known as 'fortress areas' when any strategic value had long ceased was to substantially added to that death toll.

Reconnaissance flight reports alerted German intelligence to large-scale Soviet troop movements, and in the north a build-up of forces had also been detected The objective of Soviet strategy was to encircle and annihilate the German 16th Army. Army Group North and Army Group Centre would then have a vast space between them, which would permit the Soviet Red Army to flow through. The southern shore of Lake Ilmen was the intended advance route for the Soviet 11th and 34th Armies and the 1st Shock Army, which was intent on levelling one attack. Aiming to sweep around the lower edge of Lake Seliger, the 16th Shock Army also advanced to join the other thrust.

Red inferno

German forces in the north were permitted the advantage of arranging their defence strategies, knowing that they were about to experience heavy pressure too. During December the Germans concentrated their efforts on strengthening their defensive lines. II Corps and X Corps were positioned in the area between Lake Ilmen and Lake Seliger, and to the west along the Lovat River. The *Totenkopf* Division, under the command of SS-Obergruppenführer Theodor Eicke, formed part of this force and had dug itself into the natural defensive position of the Valdai Hills in December.

Under cover of a fierce blizzard, Zhukov launched the second phase of his winter counteroffensive during the night of 7-8 January 1942. The Red Army attacked along the whole of Army Group North's southern flank. The *Totenkopf* Division's neighbours, the 30th and 290th Infantry divisions, received the full brunt of the 11th Army, 34th Army and 1st Shock Army. The German lines were pierced in places to a depth of 32km (20 miles), and the Soviet forces all but annihilated the two divisions.

The Soviets intended to trap the German 16th Army. The Soviet 11th Army chose Staraya Russia as the point at which to turn south into the rear of II Corps, and by 9 January it had advanced that far. From the shores of Lake Seliger, driving west with the intention of linking up with the 11th Army and 1st Shock Army, the 16th Shock Army then turned north along the line of the River Lovat. Defeat for the Germans seemed inevitable.

Under orders from the German 16th Army, the *Totenkopf* Division was divided up and deployed at various crisis points piecemeal. With the objective of strengthening the 16th Army's flanks, two infantry battalions were sent to Demyansk. The *Totenkopf* Division's infantry reconnaissance battalions were deployed at Staraya Russia, which they were ordered to hold at all costs. Eicke was not pleased by the division's segregation, though.

The situation had become so critical by 12 January 1942 that Field Marshal Leeb perceived the best course of action was to withdraw both his corps over the River Lovat and form a new defensive line. The worried field marshal was certain it would be akin to a death sentence if the 16th Army was to stand firm. Leeb asked permission to withdraw, and Hitler refused outright, ordering his troops to hold fast. An outraged Leeb asked to be relieved of his command, and Hitler appointed the former commander of the 18th Army, Colonel-General Küchler, in his place on 17 January.

Meanwhile, the situation had continued to deteriorate as the two German corps were slowly constricted in a pocket centred around Demyansk. On 20 January a setback occurred for Colonel-General Küchler's three-day-old command, when the Soviet armies broke through along the River Lovat. The German units were now separated on the west and east banks of the river. At Staraya Russa, though, the Soviets took heavy losses at the hands of the *Totenkopf* Division and the army's 18th Motorised Division, which held the position.

The Demyansk Pocket

Given Soviet strength and Hitler's orders, it was only a matter of time before the encirclement of a major portion of the 16th Army became inevitable, despite the determined resistance of the German divisions in the Valdai region. For another three weeks heavy fighting continued as the Soviets gradually closed the ring. About 40km (25 miles) west of Demyansk, units of the Soviet 11th and 1st Shock Armies linked up on the River Lovat on 8 February; the Soviet ring had closed firmly around II and X Corps, trapping the 12th, 30th, 32nd, 123rd and 290th Infantry Divisions, as well as the remainder of the *Totenkopf* Division. The Soviets had the equivalent of 15 fresh infantry divisions, well equipped and supported by an assortment of armoured units and independent ski battalions, pressing in on the exhausted and badly battered Germans. Inside the pocket there were 95,000 men and 20,000 horses. With the total collapse of the supply lines, Hitler was assured by Göring that the pocket could be supplied by air, and that the Luftwaffe would take responsibility for this. Hitler reiterated his orders, forbidding any attempt to break out to the west. No withdrawals from the Demyansk area would be contemplated. The trapped German divisions were instructed to hold their positions and stand firm until a new front west of the River Lovat was built, and a relief attack launched to rescue them.

An estimated supply of nearly 200 tonnes (203 tons) would be required as the minimum

Left: A* Totenkopf *soldier in typical attire in the Demyansk Pocket. Eicke's men fared better than their army counterparts with regard to winter clothing, as they received clothes from huge SS warehouses in Riga.

Right: Shivering soldiers in the Demyansk Pocket. For Eicke's* Totenkopf *soldiers, encirclement was not a matter for concern. Their Führer had ordered them to stand and fight to the last – which they would do.

daily drop. Weapons, ammunition, food and medicines – in fact all their needs had to be brought in by air. A total of just under 300 tonnes (305 tons) was actually reached at its peak by the Luftwaffe's transport squadrons. Initially at least, Göring's supply operations were able to more than match the defenders' daily requirements. These drops were not sustainable, however, and they gradually slowed down, with the Luftwaffe finally struggling to meet even half the estimated requirements. An ample supply of warm winter clothing had been procured through SS channels by the *Totenkopf* Division's supply officers for their troops before the supply lines were cut. This was one thing that was greatly in the *Totenkopf* Division's favour.

The battle to hold the pocket

Once the Soviet ring around Demyansk finally closed, General Graf Brockdorff-Ahlefeldt took command of the troops within the pocket. The remaining *Totenkopf* Division units within the pocket were split into two battle groups, which were constructed from *Totenkopf* Division and army personnel. This decision further infuriated Eicke, although he was given command of the larger group. He was ordered to defend the southwest sector of the pocket, which involved the protection of a large network of villages and their interlinking roads. Eicke and his command were entrusted with the principal task of holding firm in their sector. A corridor had been driven between the German units on the eastern and western banks of the River Lovat and they had to prevent the Soviets from widening it. SS-Oberführer Max Simon commanded the second battle group, which was positioned facing the Soviet 34th Army, on the northeastern edge of the pocket.

The Soviet Air Force dropped incendiary bombs on every building to deny any form of shelter to the *Totenkopf* Division troops. They were fighting in snow over one metre (3ft) deep and in temperatures as low as minus 30°C (minus 22°F). Eicke's battle group was subjected to intense pressure from all quarters as it tried to hold its line of scattered villages. In a number of places the Soviet forces had penetrated the German lines by late February. These penetrations had produced their own little pockets as individual villages were cut off and surrounded. The artillery of the Red Army incessantly pounded Eicke's men, with SS losses mounting dramatically, but they still held doggedly to their objective. The situation on the ground had become so confused that the Waffen-SS troops were actually strafed by their own side. To add insult to injury, Luftwaffe aircraft

***Above: Max Simon, who commanded a battle group of the* Totenkopf *Division in the Demyansk Pocket. He later went on to become an SS-Gruppenführer and lead the 16th SS Panzergrenadier Division* Reichsführer-SS.**

dropped supplies right into the laps of the Soviet attackers.

The frenzied assault on the German positions was undertaken by still more fresh Soviet divisions. This involved prolonged and bitter fighting, with neither side giving any quarter. Eicke appealed directly to Himmler for replacements, now fearing for the very survival of his fragmented and mauled division. When Himmler was eventually able to muster several hundred replacements, the Luftwaffe insisted that its supply flights lacked the capacity to carry them.

Soviet troops had infiltrated Eicke's sector so widely that all contact with neighbouring German units had been lost by the end of February. Feeling that everything was hopeless and the annihilation of his battle group was imminent as it now only numbered some 1460 officers and men, Eicke signalled his desperate situation to II Corps.

In this period the Soviet attacks became even more intense. They knew that the spring thaw would turn the frozen battleground into a muddy quagmire which would bog down their operations, disadvantaging the attackers far more than the defenders. Therefore every effort had to be made to crush the Demyansk Pocket before this happened.

The Soviets falter

Himmler intervened, telling Hitler personally about the *Totenkopf* Division's dire situation. Hitler ordered Himmler's replacements to be flown in as soon as possible. With an improvement in weather conditions, the Luftwaffe was able to make a substantial drop of essential ammunition, food and medicines to the beleaguered defenders, and on 7 March 1942 the fresh *Totenkopf* Division troops finally arrived at Demyansk.

In mid-March, as the spring thaws set in, the Soviet attacks began to tail off. In their attempt to annihilate the Demyansk Pocket, they had suffered well over 20,000 casualties, while during the same period the *Totenkopf* Division had lost around 7000 men. Never short of manpower, Soviet losses could quickly be made good. For the Germans, though, this was not an easy matter; in the case of the *Totenkopf* Division, 7000 dead and injured were replaced by only 5000 men.

Lieutenant-General Walter von Seydlitz-Kurzbach assembled under his command a relief force. From the beginning of March 1942 there had been a build-up of German forces on the west bank of the River Lovat, which he now employed, these being the 5th and 8th Light Divisions, and 122nd, 127th and 329th Infantry Divisions. Codenamed Operation 'Fallreep', this manoeuvre was intended to relieve the Demyansk Pocket by driving eastwards over the River Lovat, while Eicke's battle group would wait to be given a signal to

make a corresponding push to the west when the time was ripe.

Supported by massive air power, the offensive began on 21 March and good progress was made for the first two days. Progress slowed as Soviet resistance began to stiffen, with the enemy frantically battling to prevent a link-up between the German forces. It was not until two weeks after the push eastwards had begun that Seydlitz-Kurzbach felt confident enough to give Eicke his orders to begin his attack westwards. The delay meant the spring thaw would once more turn the ground into boggy marshland, through which Eicke's troops would have to trudge yet again. The Soviets were attacked with a frenzied determination by the *Totenkopf* Division infantry, often in vicious hand-to-hand combat. Due to determined Soviet resistance and the horrendous conditions, the *Totenkopf* Division advanced at a rate of only 1.5km (one mile) per day.

The east bank of the River Lovat was reached by a company from the *Totenkopf* Division's tank-destroyer battalion on 20 April, and on the following day it was joined by the rest of the battle group. The bridgehead over the Lovat was sufficiently secure after 73 days to start moving into what was now the Demyansk Salient, and Seydlitz-Kurzbach dispatched the first troops and supplies on 22 April.

However, the *Totenkopf* Division's ordeal was far from over. It was hoped that the remnants of Eicke's once mighty division would be pulled away from the front to convalesce, as they were now in a dreadful physical state, and undergo extensive rebuilding and refitting. With scant regard for their condition, Hitler ordered that they remain in the salient. Their task was to see that the German corridor was held open, for it was thought that it would soon come under renewed enemy attack. The Waffen-SS had shown it could fight and match anything the Red Army could field during this first campaign on the Eastern Front. Few in the military hierarchy now questioned the value of a Waffen-SS man as a combat soldier. Resentment and grave suspicions concerning the 'political' nature of Himmler's troops was still harboured by many, however.

The Waffen-SS had speedily acquiring a reputation for fanatical endeavour and heroism few other units could equal, and this fact was beyond all doubt. The incautious attitudes of many Waffen-SS officers were still a cause for concern, for it was felt that this led to excessive casualties in their units. That said, 1942 would witness an expansion of the Waffen-SS as Hitler sought to bring the war on the Eastern Front to a successful conclusion, and avert having to fight another winter in Russia.

Right:* Totenkopf *soldiers on patrol in the Demyansk Pocket. Eicke's men fought in chest-deep snow and sub-zero temperatures while resisting the Red Army. Russian efforts reached their zenith in February 1942, when SS battle groups and units became isolated and casualties soared – but the Waffen-SS held its ground.

A TIME OF TRIAL

The second year of the war on the Eastern Front, 1942, witnessed the growth and reorganisation of the Waffen-SS, seeing the birth of the powerful Waffen-SS panzer and panzergrenadier divisions. The Waffen-SS cadre divisions had been motorised by 1942, but as each had a panzer regiment they were panzer divisions in all but name. Before the end of 1942, however, they were redesignated SS-Panzergrenadier Divisionen, or armoured grenadier divisions. Their infantry regiments were soon after designated SS-Panzergrenadier Regimenter. The general background to the origins of the first divisions of the Waffen-SS and how they were created early in World War II from the full-time paramilitary formations of the existing SS gives an interesting insight into the development and expansion that now occurred.

The nucleus of the first of these divisions was the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler*, the Führer's personal bodyguard. The second was provided by the SS-Verfügungstruppe or SS-Special Purpose Troops, having at first passed through the transitional stages of being named SS-VT Division (mot.), SS-V-Division, SS-Division *Deutschland*, SS-Division *Reich*, finally being named *Das Reich*. The third was provided by elements of the SS-Totenkopferbände or SS-TV, the SS 'Death's Head' regiments, with the German police forming the fourth. The

Left: Wehrmacht and Waffen-SS in northern Russia, June 1942. Note the MP 40 submachine gun, complete with metal stock, slung over the shoulder of the SS grenadier.

'Death's Head' regiments which had not been used for the creation of the third division became the base for others: the 6th SS Gebirgs Division *Nord*, 8th SS Kavallerie Division *Florian Geyer* and 18th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Horst Wessel*.

Volksdeutsche, people of German blood resident outside the Third Reich, volunteered for service in the Waffen-SS. Numbers were such that whole divisions were constructed around them, probably the best known being SS Freiwilligen-Gebirgs Division *Prinz Eugen*. With the German conquests in western and northern Europe, volunteers from the so-called 'Nordic' countries signed up for service, being grouped, after some time, into 'Germanic' divisions of the Waffen-SS. Eventually, 'non-Germanic' western Europeans were also grouped into divisions. The grandiose racial requirements for SS membership were finally reduced by the demands of war and now whole SS divisions were created from what Nazi theorists formally believed to be 'inferior races' (see Chapter 6, Himmler's Foreign Legions).

Constant reorganisation

Considerable structural changes within the divisions of the Waffen-SS were produced by the exigencies of war and the acquisition of foreign volunteers, among other factors. Therefore, there was a continual change in the divisional orders of battle. Alterations in the organisation of the Waffen-SS itself also had their own effect. Units were frequently redesignated during their comparatively short lives, especially when the parent divisions were first partially and then fully motorised. A regiment could find itself at first designated as a Schützen, or rifle regiment, then an SS-Infanterie Regiment, or infantry regiment, next as a SS-Grenadier Regiment, or grenadier regiment, and finally an SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment, or armoured grenadier regiment. Other units were transferred from one division to another and again redesignated, whereas others were reclassified *en masse* throughout the Waffen-SS and Wehrmacht. Continuity was haphazard: in the West new elements would be created, while in the East remnants of the old ones still remained.

Although the Waffen-SS was a military force of the Third Reich, it never technically attained the position of the fourth branch of the German armed forces. It paralleled the German Army in almost every respect, and was subordinate to the Army High Command (OKH) or Armed Forces High Command (OKW) in time of battle. Its divisions could be grouped into corps, in a manner similar to the army, which if necessary could then be formed into an army. The Waffen-SS established during World War II a number of SS corps headquarters. With their own respective corps troops, they provided the necessary tactical leadership for its field divisions. At first, specific SS divisions were allocated to make up each corps. The rule was two divisions per corps, but in reality they were made up of whatever was available. With the constant movement of mobile divisions and the demands of war, SS corps could be found comprising troops that were purely SS, a combination of SS and army or just army elements. The number of corps troops varied from corps to corps, and generally those corps formed first were more richly endowed. In addition, some SS corps had other units designed for the immediate use of the corps itself rather than for detachment to divisions.

The shattered Totenkopf

The Soviet Red Army went on to the offensive again in May 1942, and the Germans only held open the new corridor through the Demyansk Salient with great difficulty. The Soviet attacks through the month and into early summer grew in determination and strength as their build-up continued. Now fully exhausted, the SS troops were denied any chance or form of rest. Eicke's corps was significantly weakened by the frequency of Soviet attacks and constant

Right: This* Totenkopf *motorcyclist grabs a quick drink in the Demyansk Salient in the summer of 1942. The stick grenades tucked into his belt were useful in close-quarter combat, especially for halting enemy attacks.

Above: Waffen-SS on the Eastern Front, summer 1942. Himmler believed that the ideological conviction of his troops enabled them 'to hold on in the instant that they would normally break down'.

attrition of defensive actions. The commander was also now physically exhausted himself.

In mid-June, temporary command of the *Totenkopf* Division was given to SS-Oberführer Max Simon when Eicke was ordered to take a period of rest. At the end of this spell of leave, Eicke was ordered to report to the Führer Headquarters at Rastenburg, where Hitler personally decorated him with the Oakleaves to his Knight's Cross. Eicke took the opportunity to describe plainly the appalling state of his remaining troops in private conversation with Hitler. Although he expressed his sympathy, Hitler refused to allow the *Totenkopf* Division to be withdrawn from the Demyansk Salient just yet. However, when the division was eventually withdrawn, he promised Eicke that it would become a fully rebuilt and reformed panzergrenadier division, complete with its own tank battalion. Eicke was further ordered that until such time as the division was withdrawn from the Eastern Front, he was to remain on leave.

By early July severe Soviet pressure was being exerted on the *Totenkopf* Division. SS-Oberführer Simon desperately pleaded for the removal of the division before it was destroyed. He believed that total annihilation was now only a matter of time. But all this was to no avail. Having seen Simon's reports, Eicke again pleaded for the withdrawal of his division. but Hitler insisted that the remnants must

stand firm and would not be released until such time as the salient had been sufficiently strengthened to withstand future attacks by the enemy. It was estimated that the German X Corps would take at least a further six to eight weeks to achieve this. On 17 July, massive Soviet assaults were once more unleashed upon the exhausted *Totenkopf* Division troops. They smashed into the SS units, who sustained considerable losses from these attacks, with only their fanatical determination holding them back. The *Totenkopf* Division defenders of Vasilyevschina were wiped out to a man when it was captured on 18 July by the Red Army. Flagrantly contradicting direct orders from his army superiors, SS-Oberführer Simon, in a mind-boggling act of insubordination, flatly refused to launch an immediate counterattack. If the army wanted the task done, he suggested instead, then they should do it themselves. The poor condition of the Waffen-SS troops must presumably have been appreciated by the corps command, as Simon suffered no repercussions for his refusal to obey the orders. The army sent in its own troops to carry out the attack. The 8th Light Division replaced the *Totenkopf* Division for the mission but still failed to oust the Soviets, and in the process suffered heavy losses.

The Totenkopf – *ghost division*

In atrocious weather conditions the Soviets continued their attempts to crush the salient. In thigh-deep mud, men of both sides fought for several days, until, eventually on 30 July, the Soviet attacks eased off. An exhausted stalemate had been reached which found the SS troops on their last legs.

The results of long periods of fighting in what can only be described as swamp conditions was taking hold on Simon's exhausted troops. Among the shattered remains of the *Totenkopf* Division, diseases spread like wildfire, the soldiers succumbing easily to dysentery, pneumonia and many other racking complaints. In an attempt to register his anger, Eicke once again presented himself to Hitler. He demanded that the division be withdrawn from the Demyansk Salient and not to be allowed to wallow in these conditions. His division should be relieved in order that it could rest and undergo a complete refit; if not he should be allowed to return to the front where, if necessary, he might die with his men. Not surprisingly, Hitler refused, and instead ordered Eicke to take long-term convalescent leave.

The weather saves the Totenkopf

On 6 August 1942, both the northern and southern edges of the corridor came under heavy attacks launched by the Soviet 11th Army and I Guards Corps. The *Totenkopf* Division once again suffered debilitating casualties. The freedom of the skies had been conferred upon the Soviet Air Force by a conspicuously absent Luftwaffe. The Soviets could now strafe and bomb at will, while massed artillery barrages rained down on the SS troops. No reserves whatsoever were left by 12 August. Non-combatant personnel were armed and filled the trenches: clerks, medics, military police and even the cooks now joined their comrades.

The *Totenkopf* Division was saved from the very real likelihood of being overrun when the heavens opened, delivering torrential rains. For two days all military operations ceased and gave the Waffen-SS time to regroup. Over the next week or so, the *Totenkopf* soldiers were able to summon up enough strength to keep the enemy at bay. In total despair, SS-Oberführer Simon suggested that the *Totenkopf* Division be written off as a division, as he felt there was hardly anything left worth saving. A little over 7000 or so men, most of them non-combatant troops, now made up the *Totenkopf* Division 'corps'.

On 25 August, the Soviet 7th Guards Division, 129th, 130th, 364th and 391st Infantry Divisions, plus the 30th Rifle Brigade, mounted massive attacks on the corridor. They hurled themselves at the Germans, bludgeoning their way into their positions. The *Totenkopf* Division was separated into numerous isolated pockets. All Soviet attacks were fought off successfully, and Simon's command determinedly held its positions, but in just a few hours over

Above: The Demjansk Shield. Ground forces were eligible for the award after serving for 60 days in the garrison, having been wounded while serving there, or gaining a bravery award while in the garrison.

1000 men were lost. The battered *Totenkopf* Division now had its old commander back, but each week Eicke had to return to Germany to oversee preparations for its rebuilding.

The *Totenkopf* Division was at last finally withdrawn in October 1942, and this was achieved only when German counterattacks had finally driven the Soviets far enough back from the salient to ensure that it was secure. Also, troop movements could be made in and out of the salient out of the range of Soviet artillery. But now only 6400 SS troops still remained alive.

On 25 April 1943, Hitler authorised the institution of a special campaign decoration to commemorate the defence of the town of Demyansk (Demjansk) by the Second Army Corps. Also serving with this corps were several non-army units, including personnel of the Reichsarbeitsdienst, Organisation Todt, police and Russian auxiliary volunteers, as well as the *Totenkopf* Division, all of whom were to be eligible. The defence of Demyansk tied down 18 Russian divisions for over 14 months, for the loss of 3335 German personnel killed and in excess of 10,000 wounded. General Walter Graf Brockdorff-Ahlefeldt returned from the Demyansk Pocket a totally broken man and died on 9 May 1943.

Heroism at Demyansk

Approximately 100,000 awards of this shield were made and bestowed by the garrison commander, General of Infantry Graf Brockdorff-Ahlefeldt. Many photographs of *Totenkopf* Division members show them proudly wearing this proof of their participation in one of the most costly battles in the division's history.

The Demyansk Pocket held a total of around 100,000 German soldiers who were totally cut off. The tenacity of the men of the *Totenkopf* Division was a vitally important factor in holding the pocket, and the survivors were eventually relieved. Mention should also be made of the crews of the Luftwaffe's transport aircraft, for they managed to supply the beleaguered defenders of the pocket with over 64,000 tonnes (65,000 tons) of essential ammunition, food and medicines, while at the same time evacuating over 35,000 sick and wounded German soldiers. Soviet aircraft and ground fire claimed over 250 Luftwaffe transport aircraft shot down.

On 13 May 1942, Hitler ordered a new corps, the SS-Generalkommando (mot.) which was authorised on 28 May. The corps itself was ordered on 9 July 1942 and formed in Germany. It was transferred to northern France later that month to control the SS infantry divisions reforming as armoured divisions after having been on the Eastern Front. Its headquarters

was redesignated as SS-General-Kommando (Panzer) on 1 June 1942. The corps was formed from the *Leibstandarte*, *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions, which were reconstructed and reformed as panzergrenadier divisions. This new corps was transported with all the speed it could muster to the Eastern Front during the second week in January 1943 at Hitler's express order. Top priority was given to the SS divisions regarding transport by rail and road to the front. The *Der Führer* Regiment from the *Das Reich* Division was the first unit to reach its destination.

At this time the picture looked extremely bleak for the Germans in the southern sector on the Eastern Front. The Soviet winter offensive of 1942 hit them like an express train, crushing a number of Hungarian, Italian and Romanian divisions. The Sixth Army's remnants at Stalingrad were also liquidated. The

Right: Paul Hausser, the hard-bitten commander of I SS Panzer Corps, known as 'Papa' to his men. He fought in Poland in 1939 and went on to serve in France and Russia. He lost an eye on the Eastern Front, the black eye patch he wore subsequently becoming his trademark. He abandoned Kharkov in February 1943 in contravention of Hitler's orders, but redeemed himself with the brilliant counterattack in March which retook the city. Hausser was instrumental in creating the fighting prowess of the Waffen-SS, being the inspector of the SS-Verfügungstruppe before the war. His awards included the Knight's Cross with Oakleaves and Oakleaves with Swords.

bludgeoned divisions of the Axis were forced to fall back in the direction of the Dnieper. The Soviet 2nd Guards Tank Army crashed its way southwest at the same time. Russian armies were pouring into the Donetz Basin and threatening the German forces with another 'Stalingrad'. In January 1943 the *SS-Polizei* Division, situated south of Lake Ladoga, became the subject of fierce Soviet counterattacks which punched a hole in the German defences. The breakthrough occurred south of Schlüsselburg, near the 170th Infantry Division. By early February 1943, the retreating *SS-Polizei* Division took over its newly assigned position west of Kopino, where it had to repulse a number of fierce Soviet onslaughts. The German summer offensive had been launched in the Kursk-Karkov sector in July 1942, with the all-important Caucasian oilfields as Hitler's goal. Kleist's panzer army broke through the Russian defences and poured into the Caucasus. Within six weeks the entire Don River region was in German hands, with one of the deepest penetrations being made by the *Wiking* Division. Here in the Caucasus during the winter of 1942-43 the *Wiking* Division remained on the defensive.

In the depth of the Russian winter the newly created 1 SS Panzer Corps. was committed to battle. The southern sector of the Eastern Front had to be stabilised, and Hitler relied on the military prowess of SS-Obergruppenführer Paul 'Papa' Hausser, commander of the élite I SS Panzer Corps.

An area close by the city of Kharkov was chosen as the concentration site where the corps could be formed up. I SS Panzer Corps was assigned an area between Volokomovka

Below: Grenadiers of the* Leibstandarte *Division fighting in Alexeyevka in February 1943. The division fought superbly in and around Kharkov at the beginning of 1943, inflicting heavy losses on the Red Army.

on the River Oskol and Kupiansk on the River Donetz. The *Leibstandarte* Division was given a sector over 112km (70 miles) long centring around Chegavayev. Numerous Italians, Hungarians and disjointed German units retreated past them flowing westwards, while the division held the line fast. The Soviets mounted numerous attacks during the first week of February, which were successfully repulsed with serious losses inflicted on the Soviets. Waffen-SS units this strong were an unpleasant surprise for the Russians.

The Red Army approaches Kharkov

Kharkov now came under the scrutiny of the Red Army. An enormous pincer movement was employed for the push on the city. The *Leibstandarte* Division and army's 320th Infantry Division held their ground firmly, and it was through them that the southern claw of the pincer had to push. The northern claw was to smash its way through the army units holding the region to the northeast of Belgorod on the Donetz. Kharkov was clearly in immediate danger from the Soviet advance. This presented a dilemma: should the city be defended, with the possibility of I SS Panzer Corps being annihilated, or the unthinkable – an evacuation – enabling a regroup, giving time to prepare a counterattack? On 9 February, in snow waist deep and during blizzard conditions, *Das Reich* began a slow withdrawal westwards.

The blizzards proved useful cover for the Soviet troops, cloaking their movements when they frequently ambushed the SS grenadiers, though deep snowdrifts trapped their vehicles. The division intended to build a new defensive line on the Donetz, but when it reached its objective it found that the Soviets were there first. This forced *Das Reich* to withdraw even farther west, to the east of Kharkov.

The *Leibstandarte* Division and the 320th Infantry Division found that they had been parted by the Soviets, who were speedily driving westwards. Seeing that the Soviet flanks were weak, the Waffen-SS mounted a strong counterattack, intending to cut through the salient formed by the Soviet advance, and link

Above: SS-Obergruppenführer 'Sepp' Dietrich, personal friend of Hitler and commander of the* Leibstandarte *Division. Totally devoid of any knowledge of military theories, he was nevertheless an inspirational leader.

up with the army's 320th Infantry Division to the south.

SS-Obergruppenführer 'Sepp' Dietrich formed a battle group for this purpose, which he commanded. The ambitious plan was to undertake a three-pronged attack. SS-Obersturmbannführer Kurt Meyer with the *Leibstandarte*'s reconnaissance battalion would take the right flank. The *Der Führer* Regiment and the *Leibstandarte* Division's 1st SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment would take the left flank. The *Leibstandarte* Division's reconnaissance battalion, under the cover of a blizzard, approached the village of Merefa. The snowdrifts masking the terrain made off-road travel almost impossible, and the forward armoured personnel carriers were employed

as snowploughs to forge a path. The battalion entered Merefa, and after fierce fighting drove out the occupying Soviet troops and captured the village.

Borki had been captured by the *Der Führer* Regiment, and the Soviet salient penetrated by almost 50km (31.25 miles), with the Soviet VII Guards Cavalry Corps being separated from its spearhead units. Within the Soviet salient a bitter confrontation was taking place for supremacy, and the SS battle group quickly lost contact with I SS Panzer Corps. The Germans in the north were not faring so well and had to fall back towards Kharkov, which looked as if it might be surrounded. To the southwest of Merefa stood Zmiyov, which the Germans had to relinquish to the Soviets due to the mounting pressure in the south.

The Leibstandarte *excels itself*

Scattered strongholds were now the order of the day for German defences, which no longer formed a continuous line and were in real danger of being encircled by the Soviets. Powerful Soviet attempts to eject the *Leibstandarte* Division from Rogan failed, and the SS troops stood firm, with each side losing and retaking ground in the prolonged and bitter fighting that ensued. Both sides took heavy casualties, especially in the action at Rogan airfield, which the *Leibstandarte* Division lost and then counter-attacked to retake it.

The *Leibstandarte* Division was quickly surrounded after it had captured Alexeyevka on 13 February. The Soviets were determined to eliminate this, the most easterly point still in German hands around Kharkov, and they launched vicious attacks which were repulsed with heavy losses. The bravery and self-sacrifice of the Waffen-SS soldiers is well illustrated by the German Foreign Minister's son, who was shot through the lung by a Soviet sniper. SS-Obersturmführer Rudolf von Ribbentrop, wishing that privilege of background or rank should not be taken into consideration, refused to be evacuated to hospital. He stated that he would go after all wounded NCOs and other ranks had been treated. This typifies the feeling SS officers had for their charges; von Ribbentrop was held in high regard by his men as a respected and popular officer. Meanwhile, in a bid to help his beleaguered comrades, SS-Sturmbannführer Max Wünsche, commanding an armoured relief column, was smashing his way towards Kharkov, encountering strong resistance on the way.

Hitler, inevitably, ordered that Kharkov was to be held at all costs. In the city, SS-Obergruppenführer 'Papa' Hausser received the order and took defensive actions. In order to be effective the defence lines had to be shortened, as they were far too widely spread. But Kharkov was a city doomed, a fact that Hausser was fully aware of.

Hausser ordered the destruction of all military installations to prevent the Soviets taking advantage of them when the city eventually fell. Escalating enemy attacks on the eastern and southern defences of the city were putting increasing pressure on the defenders, whose collapse was imminent. Hausser was a realist, and knew he was pointlessly defending an indefensible city; to him, the destruction of his command in the execution of his orders was unthinkable. He held his breath.

Meyer's audacious attack

In the meantime, Beteka was captured by SS-Obersturmbannführer Kurt Meyer with considerable Soviet loss of life. He continually launched counterattacks at the Soviet units he came into contact with. Meyer had no alternative than to bring his troops back to Alexeyevka in an attempt to defend it when it became in danger of being stormed. The Soviets penetrated the town, but his group had sufficient strength to repulse their incursions. His small group was then the object of a major assault planned by the Soviets, and Meyer was well aware of their intentions. He believed that at best they would succeed in pushing them out of the town, and at worst crush his small command. He decided the Soviet units formed up in the east would be best dealt with by launching a pre-emptive strike. His men, hungry and tired, with many casualties and now

Above: Directly disobeying Hitler's orders, Hausser abandons Kharkov in mid-February 1943. The action saved I SS Panzer Corps, and paved the way for the spectacular counterattack which retook the city in March.

low on ammunition, would attack better than they would defend.

The Soviet forces little expected an attack from the garrison of Alexeyevka. When this beleaguered force erupted, it engendered panic among the Soviet troops and they fled in disarray. This success could not be exploited, however, because Meyer's battered battalion was far too weak. Wünsche's relief column finally arrived just as Meyer's troops were pulling back into Alexeyevka. Reinforcements made breakout from the city a reality, and together they rejoined I SS Panzer Corps.

Kharkov's suburbs had been probed and penetrated on the evening of 14 February by the Red Army, which infiltrated the rear area of I SS Panzer Corps during the next 24 hours. The Soviet drive was temporarily stemmed when elements of the *Das Reich* Division launched a desperate counterattack to the northwest of Kharkov.

Around midday on 15 February 1943, Hausser once again sought permission to withdraw from the city in order to regroup his corps. With no reply forthcoming by 1250 hours, Hausser took the decision to evacuate the city, informing army group headquarters of his decision at 1300 hours. The expected order to hold Kharkov at all costs was received at 1630 hours. But Hausser was adamant that he would not consider the annihilation of his corps, and one of the best formations in the Third Reich's armoury, in the hopeless endeavour to save Kharkov. His reply was blunt: that the order was too late to be heeded. 'It is already settled, Kharkov is being evacuated', was the gruff reply Hausser gave. And thus he disobeyed his Führer, and in the process saved I SS Panzer Corps from destruction and paved the way for a great victory.

TRIUMPH AND DESPAIR

Hitler flew into one of his uncontrollable rages when he learned that his order regarding Kharkov had been disregarded. When he regained some measure of composure, he demanded to be flown to Field Marshal von Manstein's Army Group South headquarters at Zaporozhye for an explanation.

In order to escape to German-held ground farther west, SS-Obergruppenführer Hausser and his troops had to go along the 'Kharkov Corridor' that had now contracted to little more than 1.6km (one mile) wide. The action was carried out in the nick of time.

Having freed this important strategic city from the Nazi hordes, the Soviets felt a great sense of achievement. However, their forces were exhausted both by the tenacity of the German defence, and by the immense loss of life, so their offensive faltered. Troops had to be replaced and the Soviet euphoria was soon tempered by these realities.

In grand manner, Hitler ordered that Kharkov must be retaken. The Soviets could easily be ejected and an immediate counterattack could, and should, be launched, he stated. The élite I SS Panzer Corps would very soon be

Left:* Leibstandarte *soldiers on the edge of Kharkov in March 1943, just prior to the German retaking of the city – one of the Waffen-SS's greatest victories in Russia.

reinforced by the arrival of the *Totenkopf* Division and could then undertake the task. Field Marshal von Manstein wanted to use I SS Panzer Corps for other purposes, however, deploying it as the upper claw in a large pincer movement, the objective being to encircle and isolate the Soviet armies who were moving towards the River Dnieper.

XLVIII Panzer Corps pushed towards the River Samara from its position east of Dnepropetrovsk with the task of securing bridgeheads across it. Once this was achieved its objective was to make itself ready for an attack into the area to the rear of the Soviet 6th Army, by striking northwards. This unexpected German push completely took the Soviet troops by surprise, and they retreated northwards in near panic. German morale soared, as the troops were pleased to be on the attack again. Vacating their positions around Poltava, the *Totenkopf* and *Das Reich* Divisions moved towards the southeast. In appalling conditions, the terrain covered with deep snow and shrouded in fog, they hammered the rear of the Soviet 6th Army.

Manstein's master stroke

The lower claw of the pincer would be formed by the army's 4th Panzer Army under the command of General Hermann Hoth. But Hitler would not be swayed from his primary objective of retaking Kharkov, and von Manstein perceived that it would be fruitless to attempt it. Just as von Manstein was about to bow to the inevitable, Hitler's plan was thwarted.

The fly in the ointment was the *Totenkopf* Division's inability to move off the main roads and travel across country, as an unexpected thaw had completely bogged it down. Thus delayed, the *Totenkopf* Division could not be employed in Hitler's plan. Until this time, progress had been excellent, but to improve on this Eicke decided that his heavy vehicles would travel faster over the frozen ground. The division picked up speed at first, but as the temperature unexpectedly rose the frozen soil thawed, and within a short time their axles were covered in deep mud. Eicke and his division were wallowing in this thick, treacle-like substance, making any progress at all virtually impossible.

Hitler now begrudgingly approved Field Marshal von Manstein's alternative plan, and the German counterattack began almost immediately. *Das Reich*'s first objective as it drove west and southwest was Krasnograd. Its next target was Peretschepino, which was quickly taken. The division's morale was much improved when it received a personal message from Hitler on 20 February, in which he detailed their next objective.

On 22 February 1943, *Das Reich* punched towards Pavlograd supported by Luftwaffe Stuka ground-attack aircraft. Refitted with state-of-the-art weaponry and now fully motorised, the division fell upon Soviet cavalry units that lay in its path. Formidable fighters who used almost medieval tactics, the Russian Cossacks horrified the average German infantry troops. However, with no armoured cover at all, and only carrying *schashas*, the Cossack sabre, the Waffen-SS swept them aside like matchwood, inflicting horrendous losses upon them. The might of the Waffen-SS proved too much for Pavlograd, which succumbed on 24 February. The territorial gains achieved by the Germans were so fast that numerous 'friendly fire' actions occurred. This was graphically illustrated when elements of *Das Reich* came under the *Totenkopf*'s panzer regiment guns, whose fire caused many Waffen-SS casualties.

After the *Totenkopf* and *Das Reich* Division joined forces, they swung to the northeast and drove parallel to the retreating line of Soviets, hammering the enemy's flanks. When the Soviet units became short of fuel, the Waffen-SS troops found that they simply abandoned their vehicles, all in full working order, forming long, immobile columns of tanks and trucks.

Right: Well-wrapped Waffen-SS grenadiers trudge through a Russian village towards Kharkov and victory, vindicating Hitler's belief in the military prowess of the newly created I SS Panzer Corps.

In the ensuing days, the demoralised Soviet forces endured what can only be described as slaughter. *SS-Totenkopf* Panzergrenadier Regiment 1, commanded by SS-Obersturmbannführer Otto Baum and accompanied by men from the *Das Reich* Division, had been dispatched to block their escape route. This immensely strong SS unit wreaked havoc on the panic-stricken enemy, and the panzers were joined by dive-bombers of the Luftwaffe. They destroyed two complete Soviet armies, capturing or immobilising some 600 enemy tanks, of which the majority were the latest Soviet design, the T-34. The *Das Reich*'s panzer regiment was later able to employ a full tank detachment of recovered T-34s. A further 600 anti-tank guns and in excess of 400 artillery pieces was also added to this catalogue of success. The number of Soviet prisoners was not so impressive, however: approximately 9000 were captured and 23,000 killed. The reason being that Soviet troops abandoned their heavy equipment and made good their escape on foot, through gaps in the German lines.

The Germans also suffered considerable casualties. Possibly the most notable was the former concentration camp inspector SS-Obergruppenführer Theodor Eicke. This brutal man had won many enemies throughout his career, both within the SS itself and the army. His abrasive and uncouth manner endeared him to few in either service, but he was popular with the men of his division. He set an example by eating the meagre rations they were served and living in the same filthy, damp conditions in the field. The manner of his death was typical of that of many of his troops.

The death of Eicke

The divisional headquarters had temporarily lost contact with its panzer regiment on 26 February. Apprehensive at not being able to contact the regiment by radio, Eicke decided to investigate the situation personally. A Fieseler Storch scout plane was made ready and went on a reconnaissance mission. After a period of scouring the terrain, Eicke spotted elements of the regiment holed up in a small village. He ordered the pilot to land, but the next village was still held by the Soviets, a fact Eicke had not observed. Landing between the two villages, the plane was caught in a hail of bullets, crashed, and was engulfed in an inferno of flames. The panzer regiment immediately attempted to rescue Eicke, but was beaten off. The following morning, the charred bodies of Eicke, his adjutant and pilot were eventually rescued with the loss of several lives by a specially formed assault group. His men were deeply saddened by the loss of their commander and he was given a Viking-style burial at a divisional cemetery near Orelka, Russia. His memory was further honoured when SS-Totenkopf Infantry Regiment 3 was named 'Theodor Eicke' and permitted to wear a cuff band with the former divisional commander's name embroidered on it. Later in the war this regiment was redesignated SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 6.

Russian attempts to hold Kharkov

In order to block any German pushes towards Kharkov, the Soviet High Command, or STAVKA, deployed more troops into the sector, with the area south of the city receiving an armoured corps, despite the pressure its units were under. A trap had been set by the Germans and these fresh Soviet troops moved straight in to it.

The Red Army units were facing south, opposite the *Totenkopf* Division and *Das Reich*. Once Hausser had moved the *Leibstandarte* Division into their rear, a Soviet retreat was impossible. The *Leibstandarte* Division quickly established defensive positions as the *Totenkopf* and *Das Reich* Divisions levered the Soviets north towards them. The enemy was totally annihilated by *Leibstandarte* infantry, who had armoured support which was considerably strengthened by the new heavy battalion equipped with the mighty Tiger tank. With this last hurdle removed, the gates of Kharkov now lay open to the Germans.

I SS Panzer Corps and the 4th Panzer Army joined forces on 4 March and from their step-off point at Staroverovka to begin the assault

Above: Fighting in Kharkov in March 1943. I SS Panzer Corps had spearheaded the operation to retake the city, prompting Hitler to remark: 'The SS Panzer Corps is worth 20 Italian divisions.'

on the city. With the objective of forcing a bridgehead across the River Mscha, the *Leibstandarte* Division drove to Valki which was situated on it. The *Totenkopf* Division, which stood on the left flank of the *Leibstandarte* Division, had taken Stary Mertschyk then drove on to Olshany, which fell on 9 March. *Das Reich* was on the *Leibstandarte*'s right flank, but found that atrocious terrain slowed its progress, although its advance unit still reached the outskirts of Kharkov on 9 March. Peretdinaga and Polevaya were subsequently taken on the evening of 9 March by the *Leibstandarte*.

The original plan, promulgated by Hausser, was that Kharkov was to be taken by a three-pronged assault. The *Totenkopf* Division was to have attacked from the northwest. The north of the city was saved for the *Leibstandarte* Division, while *Das Reich* drove around to the north and attacked Smiyev down the eastern side. Scrapping this move, an attack on Kharkov from the west became *Das Reich*'s new task. Defence was initially light when *Das Reich* penetrated the outskirts of the city, but stiffened dramatically thereafter.

To the north, pushing down the main Belgorod-Kharkov road, SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 1, under the command of SS-Standartenführer Fritz Witt, smashed into Kharkov. On Witt's right flank was SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 2, commanded by SS-Standartenführer Theodor 'Teddi' Wisch. The left flank was taken by SS-Obersturmbannführer Kurt Meyer, who was ordered to cut off the road from Kharkov to Liptsy, north of the city. 'Panzer-Meyer' decided that it was a better bet to travel through the woods, so he

ordered his reconnaissance battalion off the road and into the great forest, but his armoured vehicles found the new terrain difficult. Meyer began to have second thoughts when he discovered sled tracks and decided that following them might be a better option. The tracks soon narrowed, however, and the column was forced to halt several times to manhandle the vehicles, which were in danger of becoming stuck, through the obstacles. Meyer decided that he must catch up with SS-Obersturmführer Gerd Bremer, who commanded the forward element. Leaving all the navigational problems to his subordinates, he set off, finally finding Bremer and his men in a large clearing. The clearing sloped away, and at its foot stood a main road, on which Soviet Red Army soldiers were massed in their thousands, complete with tanks and artillery. With only a handful of light vehicles and a command of just over 20 men, Meyer knew that his force had to remain hidden.

Above: Elated with their victory at Kharkov, Hitler insisted that the 'SS gets the necessary personnel'. The* Leibstandarte, Das Reich *and* Totenkopf *Divisions also got the latest heavy tank – the Tiger – for the Kursk Offensive.

All he could do was cross his fingers, send back messages to warn the oncoming column so that they would know what lay before them, and await its arrival. The Germans then heard aircraft, a sound they knew heralded the arrival of Stuka dive-bombers. The aircraft bombed and strafed the Soviet column, which was scattered. Seizing this opportunity, Meyer ordered his minuscule force to attack immediately the lead tanks came into view. Fearing they had walked straight into a well-planned German ambush, the Soviets panicked. Some tried unsuccessfully to flee, while many others decided to put up their hands to surrender. Hundreds of prisoners fell into the Germans' hands, and Meyer's column, hoping to max-

imise the element of surprise, drove to Kharkov as fast as possible, leaving a handful of men to guard their prisoners.

They reached the city's northern outskirts without further incident and maintained a rapid progress until they came to the edge of the city, where Meyer called a halt at a disused brickworks. Meyer and his command retraced their steps to the earlier engagement battle-ground, where countless Soviet prisoners, who seemed relieved to be out of the conflict, were being supervised by a handful of grenadiers. The other members of Meyer's battalion arrived during the next few hours. The full force was regrouped by dawn the following day and with Kharkov their next port of call, their advance was resumed. Revisiting the brickworks, they destroyed or drove off all the nearby Soviet tanks located there. A shortage of fuel made further progress impossible, and Meyer gave the order to dig in on 11 March.

Meyer's unusual choice was a graveyard, and unbeknown to him the main escape route out of the city was situated alongside his force. During the next few hours the Waffen-SS troops repulsed numerous Soviet attempts to overrun their positions. Meyer learned from the crew of a fuel tanker that had struggled through to his group that the Soviets had cut the road to the north of the city. His escape route was therefore blocked. However, the centre of the city had been penetrated by Fritz Witt's regiment, which had seized Red Square. Meyer had no choice other than to drive onwards into the city itself.

Caught by the impending German advance, the Soviet units in the city struggled fiercely to break out to the north. The *Das Reich* Division penetrated the city's western side, and on 12 March reached the main railway station at the heart of Kharkov, having overcome strong opposition. Meyer and his reconnaissance

Below: Though the Tigers and Panthers stole the limelight at Kursk, the older German tank designs, such as this Panzer III, also played their part in the greatest armoured clash in history, and were used by the Waffen-SS.

group in north Kharkov were relieved by SS-Sturmbannführer Peiper and his panzer-grenadier battalion. Together, they smashed a path to the east and southeastern sectors with the objective of flushing out what remained of the Soviet defenders. Now Kharkov was in German hands, Peiper and his units fixed Belgorod firmly in their sights and captured it on 18 March 1943, enabling the Waffen-SS to link up with the *Grossdeutschland* Division.

The victorious Waffen-SS

The *Totenkopf* panzers confronted Soviet units which had cut the Kharkov-Belgorod road and destroyed them. Their swing round the north of the city was continued southeast to Tshuguyev, where they captured the Donetz crossing. During the next few days the *Totenkopf* Division had to repulse Soviet units fleeing from Kharkov, as well as having to cope with counterattacks launched by fresh Soviet formations to the east. The Soviet High Command took cold comfort from all this effort, for during these actions the Soviet 25th Guards Rifle Division was annihilated.

After three days of fanatical close-quarter fighting in the city the Waffen-SS won Kharkov, but lost a great number of its men: over 11,500 killed. Hitler now perceived his political warriors in an even more invincible light. The Kharkov victory forged the reputation of the Waffen-SS as having fearless heroism in attack and steadfastness in defence. Hitler was convinced that the Waffen-SS could undertake the most dangerous and difficult missions with impunity, and during the remainder of the war he relied upon its divisions to fulfil the victories he desired and thought possible. The Waffen-SS, in return, tried to deliver what the Führer expected.

Once Kharkov had been retaken, the situation stabilised on the southern sector of the Eastern Front as the Germans set about consolidating their positions. However, it soon became apparent that the Red Army had established a huge salient between Kharkov and Orel in the north, extending into German territory and almost inviting attack. Hitler was transfixed by it, and soon preparations were under way to eradicate it. Once again the Waffen-SS was called upon to regain the German initiative on the Eastern Front. But the retaking of Kharkov had blinded Hitler to what was really happening: that despite his vaunted Waffen-SS he was losing the war in the East, a fact that would be confirmed at Kursk.

In the summer of 1943 one of the monumental clashes of World War II took place on the Eastern Front: the Battle of Kursk. Like the conflicts at Moscow and Stalingrad, it was terrible in its intensity and vast in scale. Armies of millions of men on each side were locked in a fierce and stubborn struggle which raged unabated for 15 days. The tank battles were the largest in the war, and in fact the greatest clash of armour in history.

Plans for the Kursk Offensive

As stated above, in mid-1943 the Eastern Front was overshadowed by a huge salient around the city of Kursk. Hitler, as ever, based his ideas on what he perceived as Nazi ideological thought. He saw that the Germans had to gain the initiative in the East, which would be achieved by liquidating this salient. He also believed that his flagging east European allies would receive a most welcome boost to their morale. Turkey, Germany's old World War I ally, had declared her neutrality, but this action could swing her into the war against the Allies. The German front would be dramatically reduced, as the bulge measured a mere 160km (100 miles) across its base. The military advantages were numerous: not only would it reduce the pressure on the number of men required to defend the line, it would also release a great number of troops from the Eastern Front to counter the expected Allied invasion of southern Europe. It would have the added advantage of destroying up to 15 Soviet armies if the offensive was successful. The German war effort would also be greatly enhanced by the countless numbers of Soviet prisoners who could be used as slave labour.

Field Marshal Erich von Manstein and General Heinz Guderian put forward a plan

Above: The Waffen-SS just before the Kursk Offensive – confident, cocky and equipped with some of the best equipment available. II SS Panzer Corps was the spearhead of Germany's last great offensive in the East.

suggesting that the Soviets be allowed to go onto the offensive and the Germans withdraw gradually, allowing the Soviets to over-extend themselves, as at Kharkov.

Hitler was unimpressed by the plans, despite the fact that they came from two of Germany's finest military brains. Hitler insisted that the offensive be planned and undertaken with all speed. It was to be codenamed Operation 'Zitadelle', or 'Citadel'. At one of the conferences in the Reich Chancellery, the Chief of Staff of OKW, Field Marshal Keitel said: 'We must attack on political grounds.' Germany's military and political leaders also assumed that successes in the East would rattle the very foundations of the Allied coalition, causing it to disintegrate under pressure from Soviet dissatisfaction at American and British delays in opening a second front. Hitler believed that 'the sooner a heavy new blow is struck at the Soviet Union, the sooner the coalition between East and West will fall apart'.

After the plan had been considered from all these angles at the highest level, Hitler issued an order on 15 April 1943 for an offensive in the Kursk Salient. The order stated: 'This offensive is of decisive importance. It must end in swift and decisive success. On the axis of the main blow the better formations, the best weapons, the better commanders and a large amount of ammunition must be used. Every commander, every private soldier, must be indoctrinated with awareness that the decisive importance of this offensive victory at Kursk will be a beacon for the whole world.'

The main blows against the Soviet forces were to be struck from south of Orel by the 9th Army of Army Group Centre and from north of Kharkov by the 4th Panzer Army and Panzer Group *Kempf* from Army Group South. By striking in the general direction of Kursk, the German High Command reckoned to surround

Above: The lull before the storm. A German 10.5cm le FH 18/40 field gun waits for orders to pound Soviet positions in the Kursk Salient. The Germans deployed 10,000 artillery pieces to support the offensive.

and destroy the forces of the Central and Voronezh Fronts defending the salient, to straighten the frontline, and in the event of success to develop their offensive into the rear of the southwest front – plan 'Panther'. Nor did they exclude the possibility of a subsequent strike to the northeast, to outflank Moscow and come out behind the whole of the Soviet forces in the centre of the front.

Since such special importance was attached to the forthcoming battle, OKH reviewed and revised the 'Citadel' operational plan several times; Hitler stated more than once that 'there must be no failure'. Divisions which were to take part in the offensive were rested and made up to full strength in men and material. Particular attention was paid to the Soviet defensive system in the salient and to the terrain. Every square metre, according to General Mellenthin, was photographed from the air.

The German forces faced Soviet forces of massive and powerful might. General Rokossovsky commanded the Soviet Red Army on the Central Front, while General Vatutin commanded the Voronezh Front. Air Marshal Rudenko commanded the 2nd, and Air Marshal Krasovski the 16th Air Armies respectively, which were to supply airborne support. Eleven complete armies were positioned in the salient itself, while another massive force commanded by Colonel-General Konev was held in reserve on the Steppe Front. Colonel-General Goryunov's 5th Air Army provided reserve air support. The Soviets could call on over 1,300,000 men, 3300 tanks, 20,000 artillery field pieces and some 2000 aircraft – a force of unsurpassed magnitude.

In reply to this Herculean force stood one of Germany's greatest field marshals, Erich von Manstein, who commanded Army Group

South. This comprised Panzer Group *Kempf*, commanded by its namesake General Kempf, and was made up of XI Corps, commanded by General Raus and comprising the 106th and 320th Infantry Divisions; XLII Corps, commanded by General Mattenklott, comprising the 39th, 161st and 282nd Infantry Divisions; and finally III Panzer Corps, commanded by General Breith, comprising the 6th, 7th and 19th Panzer Divisions and 168th Infantry Division. The 4th Panzer Army, commanded by Colonel-General Hoth, was the other portion of Army Group South. It comprised II SS Panzer Corps, commanded by SS-Obergruppenführer Hausser and made up of 1st SS Panzer Division *Leibstandarte*, 2nd SS Panzer Division *Das Reich* and 3rd SS Panzer Division *Totenkopf*; XLVIII Panzer Corps, commanded by General von Knobelsdorf, was formed by the 3rd and 11th Panzer Divisions, 167th Infantry Division and the *Grossdeutschland* Panzergrenadier Division; finally there was LII Corps, led by General Ott and formed by the 57th, 255th and 332nd Infantry Divisions. General Dessloch's Air Fleet IV provided the air support.

Army Group Centre

Field Marshal Günther von Kluge was a traditional Prussian officer who showed considerable aptitude for his chosen profession. But he was also marked by a 'vacillating character and weak-minded opportunism'. His sharp mind recognised the monstrosity of the Nazi regime, but he also saw considerable personal and professional advantages in cooperating with it. He was one of the few German generals who had favoured the invasion of the Soviet Union. His command was Army Group Centre, whose forces consisted of Colonel-General Model's 9th Army, XLI Panzer Corps, commanded by General Zorn, XXIII Corps, commanded by General Freissner, and XLVII Panzer Corps, commanded by General Lemelsen. Colonel-General Ritter von Greim's Air Fleet VI was to provide air support.

The Germans fielded some 900,000 men, 2700 tanks and 10,000 artillery field pieces. Air cover would be supplied by approximately 2000 Luftwaffe aircraft. This, too, was a catalogue of awesome might. Tacticians might perceive these two opposing forces as reasonably matched, given the fact that the Germans had engaged and defeated a Soviet force eight times its size at Kharkov. The Waffen-SS would play a disproportionately large part in the campaign, considering Hausser's command formed under 10 per cent of the total German strength. Kharkov had been won using updated versions of the old Mk III and the newer Mk IV tanks, although a few of the more powerful Mk VI Tigers had also seen service. These tanks were used at the Battle of Kursk, and more Mk VI Tigers became available. The Germans' greatest hopes lay with the Mk V Panther medium tank. The clumsy Ferdinand assault guns were also employed.

Soviet preparations

Soviet detection of the German build-up was hardly an intelligence coup, given the preparations required for the massive offensive. The physical movement of equipment and men, combined with the dramatic increase in radio activity told all. General intelligence-gathering provided further proof, and the British passed on information gathered from the code-breaking activities at Bletchley Park.

The Soviet position, from Stalin's point of view, was that the Soviet Red Army should take the offensive. His generals in the field and the High Command, however, promulgated the idea to prepare first-class defensive systems; the German armies should then be encouraged to attack and be drawn into the salient. In attempting to smash through the Soviets' extensive defence obstacles, they would bleed themselves to death. Then would be the time to launch a savage counterattack. Stalin was persuaded by their point of view; his plan, of course, would have found favour in the eyes of von Manstein and Guderian.

Some 300,000 local civilians were employed by the Red Army to help in the preparation of the defences. Elaborate steps were taken to prevent a German breakthrough. The fronts were reinforced with large numbers of guns,

Above: Grenadiers of II SS Panzer Corps show a swastika flag to Luftwaffe aircraft to designate friendly areas during the opening of the Kursk Offensive. The corps fielded some 350 tanks for the assault.

tanks and aircraft, the greatest concentration being made on the most likely axes of attack. Almost half the artillery regiments of Supreme Command Reserve allotted to the front were placed on the sector held by the 13th Army, for example, which covered the most vulnerable axis along the Orel-Kursk railway. The army was also given the 4th Breakthrough Artillery Corps, which had 484 guns, 216 mortars and 432 field rocket launchers. This provided an unprecedented concentration of artillery defence of about 155 guns and mortars of calibre exceeding 76mm, per 1.6km (one mile) of front – one and a half times the density established by the Germans for the coming offensive. As the Germans hoped to attain their objectives by massed use of tanks, the front commanders took special care over anti-tank defences, based on anti-tank strongpoints and areas, and systems of minefields. Artillery reserves were allocated and trained in good time, as were mobile obstacle detachments. The strongpoints, as a rule, were allocated between three to five guns each, up to five anti-tank rifles, and two to five mortars between a section, a platoon of sappers and a section of submachine-gunners. On the most important axes, the anti-tank strongpoints had up to 12 guns each. Anti-tank and anti-personnel obstacles were also widely employed.

The depth of defence of the Central and Voronezh Fronts on the axes of probable

attack reached 152-176km (95-110 miles). Adding the defence line of the Steppe Front and the defence line along the River Don came to 256-288km (160-180 miles), and comprised eight defence belts and lines. To picture the scale of the work done in the preparatory period, on the Central Front sector more than 4960km (3100 miles) of trenches and communication lines were dug, enough to reach from Moscow to Irkutsk. On the same front the engineers laid about 400,000 mines and bombs, and the average density of minefields on the Central and Voronezh Front reached 2400 anti-tank and 2700 anti-personnel mines per 1.6km (one mile) of front, six times that of the defence of Moscow and four times that of Stalingrad.

The Soviets believed that the Germans would concentrate their maximum efforts on the northern part of the salient. But this was a mistake. A spearhead formed from the Waffen-SS's *Leibstandarte*, *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions' armoured formations led the German offensive that was launched on the southern side of the salient. A massive artillery barrage began on the northern sector on 5 July at 0430 hours, launched by Army Group Centre with the intention of softening up the enemy positions. The Soviet defences did not suffer as badly as expected, and the assaulting Germans were surprised to encounter Red Army units ready and willing for action. The Soviets immediately responded with gun and heavy mortar fire. The anti-personnel mines that had been laid so liberally now wreaked havoc on the German troops who tried to conceal themselves in the tall grass. On the western flank the German push was beginning to bog down, and they advanced only a few kilometres by the end of the first day. The 20th Panzer Division and the 6th Infantry Division, situated

Below: Kursk yielded the usual crop of Russian prisoners, but the Red Army soldiery in general fought well and inflicted heavy losses on the Germans. The* Leibstandarte *lost 97 killed on the first day.

a little to the east, were having more success against the Soviet defences, where German armoured units penetrated about 8km (five miles) into the salient. However, the Soviet Air Force was able to mount effective air attacks, despite the Luftwaffe's air superiority over the area, and the Germans suffered heavy casualties in men and equipment.

The German armour suffered from the Soviet minefields, although Ferdinand tank destroyers and Tiger tanks played an important part in neutralising the Soviet T-34s.

In an unpleasant shock, the Germans realised that the Soviet defenders were responding with a tenacity and strength that they were not prepared for. Army Group Centre was greeted with a resistance that was far greater than anticipated, for the Soviet troops had concentrated in the north. During the whole offensive, the furthest penetration on the northern sector was only 16km (10 miles). The objective, Kursk, lay 80km (50 miles) from the frontline.

II SS Panzer Corps attacks

Prompted by intelligence gleaned from prisoners, over 600 Soviet guns delivered an artillery barrage in the south, as they believed that a German attack was looming. Along the front's entire length the German artillery opened fire with a ferocity unseen as yet. The weight of munitions used during this inferno surpassed the total used by the Germans during the Polish and French campaigns.

German radar detected the approach of Soviet aircraft when they targeted German air bases, so that the Luftwaffe intercepted them, and were more effective in the south than in the north.

The town of Oboyan was the first objective of Hoth's 4th Panzer Army, and initial progress was good. XLVIII Panzer Corps had the task of protecting the left flank of the assault. By the close of the first day the *Grossdeutschland* Division, in the company of the 3rd and 11th Panzer Divisions, was in the vicinity of Cherkasskoye and quickly overcame the first lines of defence around it. But this was at a high cost: when 10 Panzer Brigade encountered an extensive Soviet minefield 36 of its new Panther tanks were destroyed.

In order to protect the right flank of the Germans' advance, Hoth decided to neutralise the Soviet reserves as a priority, rather than leaving them for later. He ordered an attack to be launched in the northeast after the Soviet defence lines had been penetrated. II SS Panzer Corps, commanded by Hausser, was given the mission of eliminating the Soviet reserves. II SS Panzer Corps was one of the strongest elements the German arsenal could unleash on the enemy. It had an enormous spearhead of armour which comprised 200 self-propelled guns and in the region of 350 tanks. An integral Tiger unit was attached to each of the SS divisions.

The SS engineers swept the first set of minefields dexterously aside, allowing Hausser's troops easy passage through them during their assault at 0400 hours on 5 July.

The Totenkopf *forges ahead*

The Panzerkeil, or 'armoured wedge', was deployed to cut through the Soviet defences, which it managed like a hot knife through butter. The point was made up of Tiger tanks, flanked by Panthers, which were only marginally lighter. Standard Mk IV and Mk III models with StuG III assault guns flanked the Panthers and formed the point of the German advance. By the end of the first day Hausser's men had penetrated 19km (12 miles) into the salient.

II SS Panzer Corps' right flank was guarded by the *Totenkopf* Division, and its objective was the Soviet 52nd Guards Division. After tenacious combat on both sides, the Soviets were overcome. The Soviet 69th Army's command post, which housed numerous high-ranking staff officers, was situated in the village of Yakovlevo, and all were captured by the close of the first day.

The division advanced rapidly, penetrating the salient by almost 32km (20 miles) and crossing the main Belgorod-Oboyan road by the end of the second day. Progress slowed, however, when Soviet resistance stiffened. The

following day the *Totenkopf* Division plodded on slowly but relentlessly, severing many important rail and road links, and plunging a further 16km (10 miles) into the salient. The Luftwaffe's ground-attack Stukas, which had 37mm anti-tank cannon fitted under each of their wings, rendered valuable assistance to the *Totenkopf* Division during this time.

At this point in the battle, the Soviet 6th Guards Army had been divided into two forces. It was clear that if the drive were to continue the *Totenkopf* Division would have to be deployed elsewhere. The mission of covering II SS Panzer Corps' flank was given to the army's 167th Infantry Division, and it spent most of 8 July waiting for replacements to arrive.

The Germans were to be subjected to a counterattack that was to be launched from a spot northeast of Belgorod. This was to be carried out by II Guards Tank Corps and had been ordered by General Vatutin. This powerful force was ordered to smash into the *Totenkopf* Division and II SS Panzer Corps' flanks. The

Above: A Waffen-SS sniper searches for targets in a Russian village during the Kursk Offensive. Mopping-up operations were an essential part of any large assault to ensure secure supply and communications lines.

Germans became aware of the move, however, and before the Soviets could reach the *Totenkopf* Division's position, they were subjected to a massed onslaught by bombers and fighter-bombers of the Luftwaffe that completely annihilated them.

More Soviet defence lines were attacked by the *Totenkopf* Division on 9 July, and the Soviet defences began to crumble within hours. The following day the SS reached the River Psel.

The extent of the advance was now causing deep concern to the Soviet commanders, who decided it was now time to commit the 5th Guards Tank Army and two tank brigades to crush the German spearhead. They were to be moved from northeast of Prokhorovka, where they were being held in reserve.

On 5 July the *Leibstandarte*, which was positioned to the south of the *Totenkopf* Division, pushed on, with progress, at first, being extremely good. The first line of the Soviet defences was penetrated, but gradually the division's advance was stifled by heightened Soviet resistance. It took stock of the situation but nothing was going to stand in the path of the *crème de la crème* of Germany's élite political warriors. These were the men of Hitler's bodyguard division, no less.

Heavy Waffen-SS losses

During the days that formed the overture to the battle of Kursk, the Waffen-SS divisions and the *Leibstandarte* in particular demonstrated many acts of heroism and leadership. But this was not without a monumental loss. On the first day of the offensive, the *Leibstandarte* suffered 522 wounded and 97 killed in action. This rose on the second day to 906 wounded and 181 killed, representing a 10 per cent casualty rate for the division in the space of 48 hours' combat. On the other hand, the Red Army was suffering casualty rates far in excess of those suffered by the Waffen-SS. Some units were, to all intents and purposes, virtually wiped out.

Although Russian losses were appalling, they were able to fill the gaps with replacements from what appeared to the Germans as a limitless manpower pool. The Germans did not have such great manpower resources to call on, and trained reserves were becoming scarce. German Army units became bogged down on the flanks of Hausser's II SS Panzer Corps, but in contrast the Waffen-SS's advance continued despite its losses. By the end of the third day another problem was emerging – tank losses were critical. Some 160 Panthers had been lost from the initial total of 200. However, the formidable Tiger tanks were knocking out

Right: Tiger tanks of the* Das Reich *Division rumble forward at Kursk. Ironically, the slow-moving Tiger was more suited to defensive warfare, where from good positions it could wreak havoc with its 8.8cm gun.

many Soviet tanks before the latter could close the range and use their guns against the massive armour that cloaked the Tiger. Mechanical teething troubles bedevilled the Panther, its newer companion, but it showed immense promise for the future. The Ferdinand had, through a design oversight, not been equipped with a machine-gun for close-quarter defence. This small but critical oversight had left this monster, larger than the Tiger, unbelievably defenceless in these situations. Once they had penetrated the Soviet positions, these mammoths became very vulnerable to the satchel charges and Molotov cocktails of the Soviet 'tank destruction' teams. Their crews were left with little else but their personal side arms to defend themselves.

Wittmann – tank ace

On 7 July the *Leibstandarte* began to push forward towards the towns of Teterevino and Oboyan. SS-Untersturmführer Michael Wittmann proved his worth, adding seven further tanks and 19 anti-tank guns of the Soviet 29th Anti-tank Brigade to his rocketing score. Wittmann and his Tiger crew had already knocked out eight enemy tanks on the first day of the offensive. He became known as the most famous tank killer of the war, achieving his first kills with an assault gun. It was not until early 1943 that he received his first Tiger tank on the Eastern Front. The secret of his success was patience, often waiting for his victim to come within very close range. By June 1944 he was accredited with 138 tanks and 132 vehicles destroyed. But it was the battles round Kursk that first brought him into the limelight, and by the end of the offensive he had destroyed 30 enemy tanks and 26 anti-tank guns.

Psyolknee was next in the sights of the Waffen-SS. Here, a powerful armoured counterattack was mounted when between 50 and 60 T-34s manoeuvred in an attempt to gain the rear of the SS-Panzer Regiment 1. Finding himself faced with this formidable destructive force, a 20-year-old Tiger tank commander, SS-Oberscharführer Franz Staudegger, engaged the enemy without a second thought. Staudegger and his crew, labouring to fire and reload at a satanic speed, blew massive gaps in the enemy ranks with their tank's deadly 8.8cm cannon. On the battlefield he accounted for 22 T-34s destroyed, while the remaining T-34s beat a hasty retreat to avoid the attacks levelled at them by German troops equipped with Teller mines. Staudegger was immediately recommended for the Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross, which was confirmed on 10 July 1943. A veritable graveyard of T-34s had been established in the area around Teterevino, as some 90 tanks had been knocked out by the 2nd Battalion of Panzer Regiment 1, under the command of SS-Sturmbannführer Martin Gross, in the space of just three hours. SS panzergrenadier 'tank destroying' units accounted for a further 30 enemy tanks.

Das Reich, positioned on the right flank of the *Leibstandarte*, again met stiff resistance. Before the launch of the offensive, assault troops from the division had wormed their way into the enemy's first line of defences, which they were quickly able to immobilise. However, serious casualties were suffered by the division's second wave when they were caught in the Soviet barrage provoked by the initial German advance. The rain again played a major part, turning the ground into a quagmire. Not only did the panzergrenadiers have to struggle through this, but they were also without tank protection, as the rain-soaked ground had delayed their heavy support vehicles.

Das Reich *breaks through*

The village of Beresov was *Das Reich*'s major objective on the first day of the offensive. The Luftwaffe's Stukas supported the division, which captured the village by rushing past and then swinging round and attacking the enemy in the rear. A ridge of high ground beyond the village was also taken as the division rattled on. Its objective achieved, it drove forward to exploit its success. Its momentum was only halted when it encountered the extensive belt of minefields at Bey and Beresov. The Soviet lines were breached the following day, despite the troops' struggle through the mud. *Das*

Above: A Waffen-SS MG 34 machine-gun team searches for enemy aircraft during the Battle of Kursk. The weapon is mounted for the anti-aircraft role, while in the background is a downed Russian MiG-3 fighter.

Reich's armour now flowed through the gap, and the main road to Lutscki also lay open.

The *Totenkopf* Division, leading II SS Panzer Corps, carried on driving northwards, and to the west of Prokhorovka the Soviet forces were cast aside. The 5th Guard Tank Army was positioned a little way to the east of the town. This, the main reserve of the Soviets, was preparing its own offensive, with the objective of bringing II SS Panzer Corps to a standstill. However, the Soviet preparations were rudely interrupted by the appearance of Hausser's command, which turned smartly eastwards with the *Totenkopf* Division taking the left flank, the *Leibstandarte* the centre and *Das Reich* the right flank.

The Soviets just managed to hold the Germans to the west of Prokhorovka, by launching desperate counterattacks against them. They also had to endure constant air attacks from the Luftwaffe, which was pulverising the defenders. The Soviet command faced a dilemma with regard to the German advance. If they held back their counterattack to allow all their units to become fully deployed, the Germans would have time to acquire reinforcements from III Panzer Corps, which was driving northwards along Hausser's right flank. The tactical balance would move in the Germans' favour when this force arrived with its 300 or more tanks.

A Soviet decision to delay would invite disaster, so they implemented a two-part plan. A force of two mechanised brigades, a mechanised guards corps, an armoured brigade and a guards rifle division was dispatched with the objective of intercepting III Panzer Corps and halting it, or at least slowing its progress. The remaining force would immediately attack II SS Panzer Corps, meeting it square on.

All Soviet positions that could be located were subjected to an enormous Luftwaffe bombing raid when the German attack started once more on 12 July. The Panzerkeil was again used by the Waffen-SS divisions. To complete the softening-up process, a tremendous artillery barrage was laid down on the Soviet positions at the same time.

Carnage at Prokhorovka

With the advantage of the sun at their backs, which was to dazzle their enemies, the Soviets broke cover and at full speed drove straight at the amazed Germans as the German artillery barrage ceased. The experienced German gunners gave a good account of themselves and many Soviet tanks were knocked out. A considerable number reached the German lines, however, and battle commenced at virtually point-blank range. This favoured the Soviet T-34's lighter 76mm gun, and the effect of the smaller calibre was devastating. Tanks on both sides were blown apart by direct hits. Suicidal bravery was often demonstrated by the Soviet tank crews, who, once their ammunition was spent, deliberately rammed the enemy. A T-34 travelling at top speed, weighing 29.5 tonnes (30 tons), has a sobering effect on an enemy tank and its crew.

The *Totenkopf* Division, positioned on II SS Panzer Corps' left flank, was engaged by XXXI Guards Corps and XXIII Guards Corps, who halted the *Totenkopf*'s advance and forced it onto the defensive. II Guard Tank Corps provided stiff opposition to *Das Reich*, which found its weight too much to shake off.

The high point of the battle was reached by the afternoon, but the outcome hung by a thread and could have swung either way. The Soviet blocking force had achieved its objective and halted III Panzer Corps, which was battling to advance towards II SS Panzer Corps. This was a blow for Hausser.

In a desperate attempt to redress the situation and influence the result in their favour, the *Leibstandarte* regrouped. The very last vestiges of the Soviet reserves were now committed to the fray as the Soviets had successfully anticipated the Waffen-SS divisions' move. By nightfall, with both sides utterly exhausted by the fierce fighting that had raged all day, the battle was reduced to all but a handful of small individual skirmishes. Some 300 German tanks had been destroyed and many more had suffered major mechanical problems, effectively disabling them. The Soviets could recover their damaged tanks and repair or cannibalise them wherever possible. They took fearful casualties but were in command of the situation on the battlefield. Hitler officially decided to suspend Operation 'Citadel' on 13 July, although the fighting continued until 15 July. Nothing positive could come out of the battle, not even the smallest hint of limited success. Field Marshal von Manstein argued that the offensive could have some chance of limited success if it were relaunched with less ambitious objectives to continue the pressure on the Soviets. The final nail in the coffin for Operation 'Citadel' was Hitler's determination to withdraw the *Leibstandarte*, *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions from the Eastern Front. The Allied invasion of Sicily, which had begun on 10 July 1943, preyed on Hitler's mind during the next three days, caused him to become increasingly concerned. The Italian Front could only be strengthened, in his opinion, by his élite Waffen-SS divisions. The soft underbelly of Europe was potentially where Germany's greatest danger lay. Hitler gravely reduced the strength of troops in the Kursk region to such a point that it was unlikely to withstand a Soviet counterattack. The offensive's territorial gains would all have to be sacrificed to the Soviets, which was the case by 23 July.

Kursk – the reckoning

The battle had inflicted resounding losses on both sides. The German losses were catastrophic in both men, which was estimated at around 100,000, and tanks. The Wehrmacht was never to recover from this disaster. The Eastern Front drained the German forces through attrition; the initiative had been lost and would never be regained. The Soviet catalogue was even more horrendous, though the

Above: Waffen-SS grenadiers under fire at Kursk. By 12 July 1943, the German offensive had been halted. The Russians had suffered 50 per cent tank losses, but they had wrested the initiative in the East from the Germans.

extent was concealed from the country until the collapse of the Communist regime in 1989. They suffered over 250,000 killed and 600,000 wounded, and 60 per cent of their entire tank strength was destroyed. But for them the battle marked the turning point of their war.

In Hitler's view, the Waffen-SS had once again proved without doubt its superiority, which he attributed to Nazi ideology. The army units on the flanks were thrown back or held their positions, but up to the last second of the battle his political warriors were advancing.

Before the Waffen-SS divisions could be transferred to the West they were transported for a short period of rest to an area near Kharkov. On 25 July, General Malinovsky ordered a counterattack against the German forces deployed in the Donetz Basin. The German positions along the Mius River were attacked and Field Marshal von Manstein's troops were overrun. On 30 July, the army's 16th and 23rd Panzer Divisions were moved south with the *Totenkopf* and *Das Reich* Divisions and committed to the conflict when they reached Stalino. The front was stabilised after three days of merciless butchery, and the Soviet push was halted.

The German situation was still very perilous, and they were soon to suffer two attacks delivered by three complete Soviet Fronts around Belgorod and in the direction of Orel. To cover Field Marshal von Manstein's forces left flank once more, the *Totenkopf* and *Das Reich* Divisions were hastily dispatched northwards. In the East, the writing was on the wall for the Third Reich.

HIMMLER'S FOREIGN LEGIONS

It still seems incredible that thousands of men, whose countries had been overrun and conquered by the Nazis, should volunteer for service with the SS, the very force which had delivered a vicious and crushing blow to their compatriots. Why did these men accept military service with the German armed forces, let alone the SS with all its connotations? And why did the SS recruit them, and having done so, trust them in battle? This chapter examines the foreign units which fought in the Waffen-SS on the Eastern Front, units which on the whole made a valuable contribution to the Third Reich's war in Russia.

The origin of the foreign volunteer legions lay in Heinrich Himmler's quest for a pan-German Europe. Himmler had decreed in 1938 that non-Germans of suitable 'Nordic' origin could enlist in the Allgemeine-SS, for at that point in time the distinction between the civilian 'general', or Allgemeine-SS, and 'military', or Waffen-SS, did not exist as such. Norway, Denmark, Holland and Belgium all had their own Fascist parties, which in some cases modelled themselves on Germany, for example, while other European countries took their

Left: Léon Degrelle, the leader of Walloon volunteers on the Eastern Front and winner of the Knight's Cross. Hitler told him: 'If I had a son, I would wish him to be like you.'

Left: Himmler in conversation with Anton Mussert, the leader of the Dutch Nazi Party, whose members formed their own SS in September 1940. The Dutch SS, though, had to take an oath of loyalty to Hitler.

inspiration from Rome. Spain and Italy, of course, also had ruling Fascist regimes. France must be seen in a different context as she had fought with the Allies against Nazi Germany, only to be vanquished and humiliated. The octogenarian Philippe Pétain, Marshal of France and 'Victor of Verdun', was called upon by President Lebrun to form a government on 17 June 1940. The 84-year-old marshal consented, signing an armistice with Germany on 22 June. Under the terms of this agreement, the only one Hitler ever signed with a defeated enemy, only part of France was to be occupied, the rest would be free of the enemy's presence. But in both occupied and unoccupied zones the authority of the French Government would apply. Vichy, in the unoccupied zone, became the seat of the new government after it had established itself in the city. The expression 'Vichy France' is often used as though there was a difference between 'Vichy' and the 'real' France, but actually there was no distinction.

The fall of Norway and Denmark

In the early dawn of 9 April 1940 the Germans mounted a simultaneous invasion of Norway and Denmark (which strangely did not involve SS forces), codenamed *Fall Weserübung* or Operation 'Weser Exercise'. The operation was characterised by lightning speed, meticulous planning and total secrecy. Norway was the first western European country to be overrun by the Nazis, and also held the dubious distinction of spawning the most notorious (if not the most accomplished) of all collaborators, Vidkum Quisling. Unlike other occupied countries, Norway had only one collaborative political party of any significance, the *Nasjonal Samling* (NS) – National Unity movement – which Quisling founded in May 1933, soon after Hitler came to power in Germany. The organisations of the NS paralleled those of

Left: Recruits of the Freiwilligen Legion* Niederlande *on parade. The unit's cuff band can clearly be seen, as can the special arm shield in the Dutch colours of red, white and blue. The Nazis viewed the Dutch as a particularly valuable stock of 'Nordic' blood, and many of them joined the* Westland *Regiment of the* Wiking *Division. The formation of a purely Dutch unit seemed the next logical step. However, the poor handling of recruits by the German training staff resulted in some disgusted volunteers resigning. The legion was sent to the northern sector of the Eastern Front in January 1942, but after heavy engagements with the Russians only 20 per cent of its strength remained in the field by March. It was reformed and committed to the fighting once again near Leningrad in the spring of 1942, again suffering heavy losses. The unit was disbanded in May 1943.

Nazi Germany, but the NS did not assist the invaders, contrary to popular belief at the time. Immediately after the German invasion, Quisling attempted to assume power, but one week later Hitler ordered him to step down. He was appointed 'Minister President' of Norway by Hitler on 1 February 1942, becoming the only leader ever to achieve such high office in a German-occupied country.

Denmark was overrun and occupied with virtually no resistance. Two German aircraft were shot down, a few armoured cars were damaged and 13 Danish soldiers were killed and 23 wounded. It was nothing more than a skirmish. Before the Danes had had breakfast, it was all over. There was no 'fifth column'. The Volksdeutsche (ethnic Germans outside Germany) and the pro-German Danes were as surprised as any by the fate which literally fell upon them from the sky. It was the first example in any war of a successful airborne operation. Once they had recovered from their shock, the North Schleswig Germans welcomed the arrival of 'their' army. They offered hospitality, directed traffic and in some cases even took it upon themselves to round up and guard Danish prisoners of war. But nowhere did any Danish citizen indulge in an act of premeditated sabotage. Before the invasion the Germans had dispatched a small commando unit to Pagborg to ensure that the Danes did not try to impede their advance by blowing up the important bridge there – an unnecessary precaution, as the Danes had not even mined it.

Denmark's Nazis

Denmark had several pro-Nazi political parties simply because no one had succeeded in welding them all together. Vidkun Quisling had no Danish equivalent, and entrusting political power to the Danish Nazis never seems to have been considered by the Germans. Founded in November 1930, the *National Socialistiske Arbejder Parti* (DNSAP) was the largest of the Danish Nazi parties. A three-man committee initially formed the leadership, but Frits Clausen took over in 1933. It was highly organised, had its own corps of political leaders, and storm troopers – *Storm Afdelinger* (SA) – to protect it.

Both geographically and linguistically close, the Netherlands was home and place of work for some 52,000 Germans before World War II. It is not too surprising that during Hitler's years of triumph a number of imitation Nazi movements emerged in Holland. Anton Adriaan Mussert founded the *Nationaal-Socialistische Beweging* (NSB) on 14 December 1931, a strictly nationalist Dutch Fascist movement, which was to prove the most successful.

Dutch SS recruits

Holland was invaded by the Germans on 10 May 1940, and surrendered after only four days of panic and confusion. Under the leadership of Arthur Seyss-Inquart, Holland was declared to be a Reichskommissariat on 18 May. Being the most significant advocate of collaboration, the NSB came to the forefront. It was professionally structured, and also had its own storm troopers, the *Weer Afdeelingen* (WA). The NSB made a bold move on 11 September 1940 by establishing its own SS. The initiative came from J. Hendrik Feldmeyer, the former leader of the *Mussert Garde*, who envisaged it as the counterpart to the German Allgemeine-SS. At first simply known as the *Nederlandsche SS*, it became the *Germaansche SS en Nederland*, or the Germanic SS in the Netherlands, on 1 November 1942. Until then it had been one of the paramilitary sub-formations of the NSB, but once subject to Himmler's orders it was part of a greater Germanic SS. Mussert's control was greatly circumscribed, and Dutch SS men had to take an oath of loyalty to Adolf Hitler. Voluntary enlistment into the Waffen-SS constantly depleted its membership, which was nominally 3727, with a strength of five regiments plus an SS Police Regiment on paper. There was possibly as many as 7000 Dutch volunteers in the *Germanische Sturmbanne*, a General SS formation raised from the large force of Dutch and other 'Nordic' workers in Germany. Seven battalions were formed in the industrial cities of Berlin, Brunswick, Dresden, Düsseldorf, Hamburg, Nuremberg and

Stuttgart. The *Germanische Sturmbanne* was never anything more than a recruiting agency for the Waffen-SS.

No official position was tendered to Mussert. A new nationalist movement, the Netherlands Union, sprung into being almost unbidden and challenged his authority briefly. It claimed 800,000 members within seven months of its inception. The party's growth was meteoric, but its decline was equally spectacular. Its success initially was due to misconceptions by both sides: the Dutch mistook it for a 'patriotic' rallying point, the Germans for a collaborative movement. The Germans suppressed it and the Dutch deserted it when it turned out to be neither. On the tenth anniversary of its foundation, the NSB was granted an exclusive political monopoly in the Netherlands; all other parties were faced with merger or disbandment.

Belgium was in many respects, two countries and a German region, joined as a single political unit. Flanders is Germanic in language and race, and Wallonie is French speaking and of racially mixed Celtic and Romanic origin. The only strong bond is a common religious faith, Roman Catholicism. The quiet town of Eupen, only 9.6km (six miles) from the German border where almost all the 17,000 citizens were ethnic Germans, was the capital of German-speaking Belgium, a region of about 65,000 inhabitants. Control of this territory has shifted many times between France, Germany and Belgium. After the invasion of 10 May 1940 it was declared part of the Reich by Hitler.

Flemish fascists

The Nazis always drew a clear distinction between the two ethnic peoples of Belgium, initially favouring the Flemings, their racial 'cousins', but eventually appreciating that the Walloon leader, Léon Degrelle, was a more valuable disciple. The people of Flanders resented the French-speaking state dominated by the Walloons. The German occupation of Belgium in World War I helped Flemish nationalism, which until then had been mainly intellectual, to become a political movement in its own right. Under German patronage, a Council of Flanders was set up in Brussels in February 1917. It consisted of some 200 Flemish autonomists and was granted the status of a provisional government of Flanders. The *Frontbeweging*, or 'Front Movement', an influential separatist faction sprung up, which later became the *Frontpartij*, or 'Front Party'. The leaders of the Council of Flanders were tried for high treason after the war, although none were executed and all were set free by an Act of Clemency in March 1929. The ranks of the *Frontpartij* began to rupture in the early 1930s. Fascism, a new element, entered into the demand for autonomy and manifested itself with the formation of a break-away party called the *Verbond van Dietsche Nationaal-Solidaristen* – 'Union of Netherlandish National Solidarity' – October 1931. This was abbreviated to *Verdiaso* or simply *Dinaso*.

Flemish SS formations

Joris van Severen, a young lawyer, was the leader of *Dinaso*. A former army officer, he was stripped of his commission when his nationalist sympathies became apparent. *Dinaso* initially demanded that the Flemish part of Belgium join Holland in a Greater Netherlands community. In 1934 van Severen discovered that the Walloons were of common Frankish descent, and this prompted a complete reorientation of policy, with him now favouring the continued existence of the Belgian state. *Dinaso* had its own storm troopers, known as the *Dinaso Militie* until 1934, when they were renamed the *Dinaso Militanten Orde* (DMO).

Belgium was attacked on 10 May 1940 and overrun and occupied within a fortnight. Scores of 'fifth column' suspects were arrested and taken by the Belgian police to France. Due to its speed, the German advance had caused a panic. Without the benefit of trial, 22 of these suspects were shot dead at Abbeville on 20 May, Joris van Severen among them. *Dinaso* could not find a successor of his calibre, and the question of how far it should cooperate with the Germans deeply divided the party.

Above: Personnel and vehicles of the* Wiking *Division (note the divisional insignia on the mudguard), the best foreign unit in the Waffen-SS. Composed mainly of west Europeans, it became an élite panzer division.

The *Vlaamsch Nationaal Verbond* (VNV) was to emerge as the leading proponent of working with the Germans. Those who favoured collaboration were obliged to do so within the frame work of this party. Gustave de Clercq had been leader since 1933, when a number of Flemish National parties banded. Broadly, its political aspirations were similar to those of *Dinaso*: the establishment of a greater Netherlands which would embrace all peoples of Dutch/Flemish stock from French Flanders in the south, to German Friesland in the north. The VNV differed from *Dinaso* over attitudes towards religion. The VNV was devoutly Catholic, while van Severen was passionately anti-clerical. The VNV's uniformed militia, the *Dietsche Militle* (DM) was probably the most important part of the movement. It was brought into being by an amalgamation of the VNV's *Grijze Werfbrigade*, or Grey Defence Brigade, and *Dinaso*'s DMO.

An apparently harmless 'cultural' body dedicated merely to fostering greater artistic contacts between Flanders and Germany was founded in 1935. This very small faction called itself the *Duitschen-Vlaamsche Arbeidsgemeenschap*, or German-Flemish Working Community, a title that conveniently abbreviated to *Devlag* ('the flag'). The reality was quite different. It was led by a fanatical apostle of Adolf Hitler, Jef van de Wiele, who envisaged himself as the Führer of a National Socialist Flanders under the benevolent protection of the Germans. The wholesale incorporation of Flanders into the German Reich became *Devlag*'s aim. A decree that 'all authorised

Above: Norwegian recruits of the Freiwilligen Legion* Norwegen. *The SS opened a recruiting office in Oslo soon after Norway fell to the Germans. When trained the legion was sent to northern Russia, where it was annihilated.

political parties in Flanders must merge with the VNV or be dissolved' was made by the German occupation authorities on 11 May 1941. Only collaborationist parties were 'authorised', so in effect all pro-Nazi factions were now under one umbrella. However, an exception was made for 'cultural' bodies, which allowed *Devlag* to escape the net. Although before the war it was only on the outer fringe of politics, under the occupation it was to drop its 'cultural' camouflage and emerge as a serious rival to, and even an enemy of, the VNV.

In Antwerp, two pro-German Flemings Ward Herman and René Lagrou, formed the equivalent of the German Allgemeine-SS in September 1940, which began by enrolling 130 supporters of the New Order. By November 1941 there were 1580 members, with a further 4000 'sponsoring members'. The corps' original title was *Algemeene Schutsscharen Vlaanderen*, but it was simply referred to as the *Vlaamsche SS* or as the *SS Vlaanderen*. Having attained regimental strength by September 1941, it was then known as 1 SS-Standarte *Flandern*. With Himmler's policy of bringing all non-German general SS formations within a single German orbit, it became the *Germaansche SS in Vlaanderen*, or Germanic SS in Flanders, in October 1942. The cautious attitude of the VNV was very much at odds with the policy of the Flemish SS. Jef van de Wiele, the *Devlag* leader, held an honourary commission in its ranks. *Devlag* maintained a close relationship with the Flemish SS and was also openly pro-Nazi, advocating much greater control in Flanders.

In Wallonie the Germans discovered a far more dependable and charismatic collaborator than could be found anywhere in Flanders: Léon Degrelle. In 1935 he founded a spectacularly successful political movement, *Christus Rex*, popularly known as the Rexist Party. Its

fortunes, however, were in steep decline in the months immediately preceding World War II. The German conquest and occupation was the catalyst for its revival. In May 1941 the Rexists became the only authorised political party in Wallonie. Rexism was a 'one man show' unlike the VNV, and enjoyed a much narrower base of popular support in Wallonie than the VNV had in Flanders. Rex had its own storm troopers known as the *Formation de Combat.*

Before the outbreak of war only a handful of fanatical 'Nordics' had offered themselves for service with the Allgemeine-SS . Mainly devout anti-Communists, they saw the 'Red Menace' as a reality, an ominous threat to their homelands and way of life. Across the English Channel, the 'Communist threat' gave rise to a strange British stance, and on 14 February 1940 the British Government announced that volunteers would be permitted to go from Britain to Finland to fight in the Finnish Army. Sir John Anderson, the Home Secretary, answered a question tabled in the House of Commons by Mr D.N. Prill on the position of volunteers under the Foreign Enlistment Act 1870. This act had been quoted when volunteers went to Spain to fight in the Spanish Civil War. British subjects were permitted to take part in a conflict in another country if they wished to volunteer. It was this machinery that enabled men to go to Finland under a scheme organised by the Finnish Legation in London. They were to go as private citizens and be formally enlisted when they arrived in Finland. As the League of Nations resolution on the Russo-Finnish War made it clear that Russia was the aggressor, British help for Finland would not violate international law. Some volunteers arrived in Finland and fought, and in some cases were actually under German orders during the war.

With the conquest of Norway, Denmark, Holland and Flanders, the SS was able to recruit directly among the 'Nordic' peoples. The collaborative parties were the instrument that would provide the correct type of manpower, so special units were set up to absorb volunteers from these racially approved regions. SS-Standarte *Nordland* was established within weeks of the occupation of

Right: The very distinctive 'Trifos' collar patch identifies these soldiers as being members of the Freiwilligen Legion* Flandern, *a Flemish SS unit. Like most of the indigenous legions raised by the SS, it was sent to the Eastern Front after being trained. It was committed to battle near Leningrad in the autumn of 1941. It fought well, being cited for its gallant conduct, but took heavy casualties.

Norway and Denmark, so that young men from these two countries could ostensibly train 'for police duties' in their respective homelands.

After the defeat of France, Alsace-Lorraine was reincorporated into Germany. Sennheim in Alsace housed a French Army barracks which the SS took over for the initial selection and basic training of the Norwegians in common with other western European volunteers. Those who passed were then posted on for more advanced instruction elsewhere – Austria in the case of the Norwegians. In January 1941, recruitment intensified for the *Nordland* Regiment. Quisling made a radio appeal for 17-25-year-olds to come forward 'to help our Germanic brethren fight English despotism'. They hoped for 3000 volunteers, but the response was not encouraging and numbered only hundreds. Jonas Lie, the Chief of the Norwegian Police who, although strongly pro-German, was not a member of NS, was among those who did volunteer, as was Axel Strang, Minister of Sport and Chief of Staff of the *Rikshird*. The age limit for volunteers was then raised to 40 years, with a minimum engagement of two years, at the end of which they would receive joint German citizenship. *Nebenstelle Nordsee* in Copenhagen acted as the recruiting agency for the Danes.

The Wiking *Division*

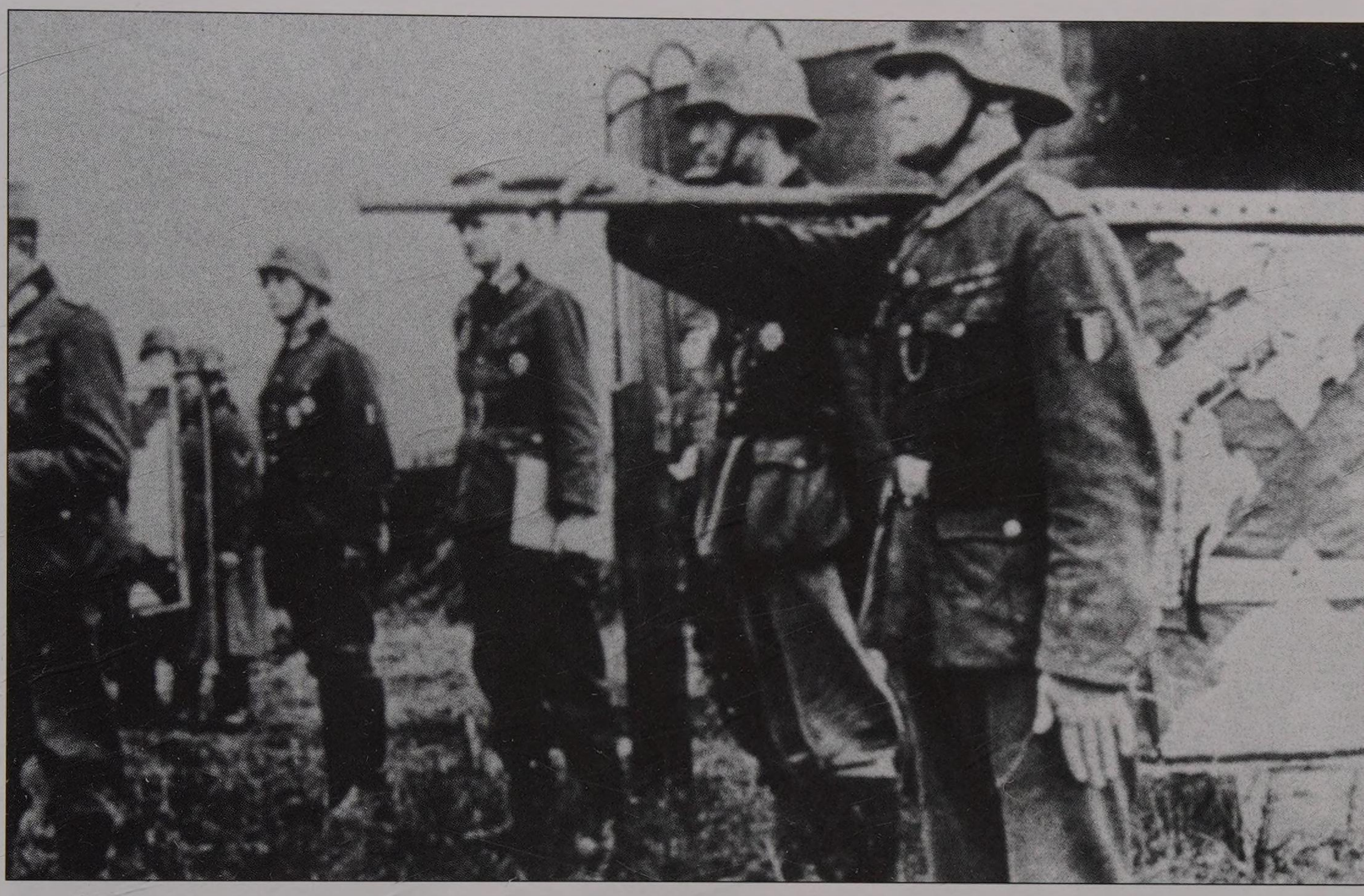
The *Nordland* moved to Heuberg in Northern Germany from Vienna and Klagenfurt in Austria in February 1941. Here the *Germania* Regiment of the *Das Reich* Division was the basis for a new division of the Waffen-SS. The Danish/Norwegian *Nordland* and the Dutch/Flemish *Westland* Regiments were to be incorporated with it. This fresh division was now given the name *Wiking* and numbered the 5th division of the Waffen-SS.

A number of 'green' personnel were seconded to the *Das Reich* Division to provide them with combat experience, and took an active part in the invasion of Yugoslavia in April 1941. Among those were Jonas Lie and Axel Strang. After his return as a decorated hero, having won the Iron Cross 2nd Class, Lie immediately engaged in intrigue with Reichskommissar Terboven against their mutual enemy Quisling. Within the *Rikshird*, Lie founded the equivalent of the Norwegian Allgemeine-SS with the complicity of the German authorities. On 16 May 1941, he proposed the immediate establishment of a *Norgess-SS*, or Norwegian SS, at a secret meeting of the 7th Hird Regiment in Oslo, with some 130 of its members enrolling at once. This was announced in the press on 21 May. Neither forewarned nor consulted, Quisling was furious but impotent. The Norwegian SS had already been given Himmler's blessing, and he arrived in Oslo to preside over the oath-taking by the new recruits the very same day. Elverum was the destination for the new Norwegian SS men, where they began their six-week basic training after Himmler's departure. Before their training was complete, Hitler invaded Russia on 22 June 1941, an event which changed the whole perspective of the war as well as their part in it.

The Norwegian Legion

Quisling's call to his fellow countrymen to join in the fight against 'English despotism' had been unsuccessful. However, a much more effective propaganda weapon lay in Hitler's self-styled 'crusade against Bolshevism'. Stalin's unprovoked attack on Finland had already angered the Norwegians, with the call for assistance in the struggle being answered by the formation of a Legion of Scandinavian Volunteers. No significant contribution to the war was made as it arrived too late.

The formation of a Norwegian Legion was announced on 29 June 1941. It was under the control of the SS from the very beginning, although this fact was carefully concealed from the Norwegian public. The legion was portrayed as a Norwegian expeditionary force fighting against Bolshevism, rather than an SS body in Hitler's pay. The NS paramilitary formations such as the *Rikshird* and the *Norgess-SS* predictably provided the majority of the volunteers, but generally a gratifying number of volunteers offered themselves, including about 85 per cent of the recently formed *Norgess-SS*.



Above: Some of Degrelle's Walloon volunteers on parade. Originally the legion was in the German Army as the Walloons were regarded as an 'inferior' race. Himmler soon changed his mind when he saw their conduct in battle.

Volunteers were promised that existing ranks would be retained by serving soldiers, that they would be subject to Norwegian, not German, military law, and that the raised right-armed 'Nazi' salute employed by the SS would not be required; none of these commitments were honoured. The legion was officially christened Freiwilligen Legion *Norwegen*, or 'Volunteer Legion Norway', on 1 August, with its strength being given as 1218 men by the end of 1941.

In Norway recruiting continued unabated with two new companies being raised, one drawn from cadre personnel of the Labour Service, the other mainly from the police, and predictably referred to as the police company. The *Norgess-SS* was incorporated into the Germanic SS which encompassed all non-German Allgemeine-SS formations in occupied western Europe, when it was transformed into the Germanic SS Norway on 21 July 1942. All connections with its *Rikshird* parent were severed by the Germanic SS Norway, and membership of both organisations was no longer possible. Its prime allegiance was now to Germany, and not to its local collaborationist leader, with a new oath of allegiance being taken to Hitler not Quisling.

The Danish Government announced its intention of raising a corps of volunteers to fight against the Soviets on the German side within a week of the invasion. The Freikorps *Danmark*, as it was to be known, was proclaimed on 28 June 1941. Volunteers between the ages of 17 and 35 who had either completed their period of conscript service within the previous 10 years, or were currently in the Danish armed forces, were called on to enlist. An equivalent rank was promised to those who

Above: Latvian SS soldiers in action in Russian in 1943. The Waffen-SS raised two Latvian divisions, whose soldiers proved to be the toughest fighters of all the volunteers recruited by the Germans in Russia.

were career soldiers. It was very definitely an official body sponsored by the Danish Government, not the protégé of any political party. From the start it was a part of the Waffen-SS. In its homeland, like the Norwegian Legion, this fact was concealed from the general public. The Freikorps *Danmark* had a strength of 1164 men by the end of 1941. Attached to the *Totenkopf* Division, it went into action in May 1942 and took part in the celebrated action at Demyansk. Having suffered 121 killed, it was brought back to Denmark for four weeks' leave in September. In October 1942 it returned to the Eastern Front, but in April 1943 was finally withdrawn and disbanded the following month.

Dutch and Flemish men between the ages of 18 and 25 were encouraged to volunteer in the Standarte *Westland* which had been established by the German SS in May 1940. Recruiting did not get under way until that autumn, when they were told they could train 'for police duties' in their respective homelands. The regiment was up to full strength in a matter of weeks due to the number of volunteers that presented themselves for service. The *Westland* was incorporated into the Waffen-SS during the winter of 1940-41. Encouraged by his success in finding Dutch and Flemish volunteers, Himmler tried to raise

a second volunteer regiment on 3 April 1941, to be known as the Freiwilligen Standarte *Nordwest*. With Flemings, Dutch and Danes being drawn off into ethnic legions of their own, the *Nordwest* shrank to such an extent that it was disbanded a mere six moths later, on 21 September 1941.

Langemarck *and* Wallonien

A Flemish Legion, open to men between the ages of 17 and 40, was announced. In September 1941 it was officially christened the Freiwilligen Legion *Flandern*, having previously been known variously as the *Verbond Flandern*, *Landesverbond Flandern* and *Bataillon Flandern*. Ex-regular soldiers, especially officers and NCOs, were given preference. Those below the age of 23 could sign on for a specified period, the minimum being 12 months, while for other candidates enlistment had to be 'for the duration'. The unit was sent to the front at Leningrad in November 1941, having been deemed ready for active service as part of the 2nd SS Motorised Infantry Brigade. It was pulled out of the line after six months' active service at the front in June 1942, returning in August 1942, but was later transformed into the SS Volunteer Assault Brigade *Langemarck* in May 1943. The honourary title *Langemarck* had been conferred upon the 4th *SS-Totenkopf* Infantry Regiment on 20 April 1942. It became the basic formation around which a Flemish Brigade was to be constructed. Throughout Belgium the SS had by now no fewer than 23 recruiting offices, but there were still insufficient numbers coming forward, and it was only by adding a Finnish SS battalion that the brigade could be brought up to the required strength.

Walloon volunteers who came from Léon Degrelle's Rexist movement were concentrated by the German military administration in the Legion *Wallonie* and assigned to the army. It participated as an army unit in the Eastern Campaign, then in 1943 an agreement was reached between the Supreme Command of the Wehrmacht, the Commander of the General Staff of the Army and the Reichsführer-SS that the Walloons should be assigned to the Waffen-SS on 1 June 1943. The Legion *Wallonie* was then converted into the SS Assault Brigade *Wallonien*, and in July 1944 it was reorganised and enlarged becoming the 28th SS Volunteer Panzergrenadier Division *Wallonien*.

The contingent of French volunteers had a similar development. The French Legion, *Volontaire Française* under the German military commander in France, was formed in 1941 and was employed on the Eastern Front as an army volunteer unit. The Vichy French Government in midsummer of 1943 gave special authorisation for the organisation of a French SS Volunteer Regiment, which was reorganised into the French SS Volunteer Assault Brigade in 1944. It was to have assigned to it the German Army's French Volunteer Legion, 6400 volunteers from the French militia, the navy, the NSKK and the Organisation Todt; it became the 33rd Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS *Charlemagne*.

Latvian and Estonian recruits

From 1941 a battalion of Finnish volunteers was incorporated into the *Nordland* Regiment and together they were assigned to the *Wiking* Division when it participated in the Eastern Campaign. In midsummer 1943 it was ordered back to Finland, where it was incorporated into the Finnish Army.

When Latvia and Estonia had been invaded by the German forces, volunteer units were formed immediately into battalions for the support of the army. These were later subordinated to the commander of the police. At the beginning of 1943, all Latvian volunteers in the Waffen-SS were concentrated into the newly formed Latvian SS Volunteer Legion together with the existing battalions. This development was opposed strenuously by the Ministry of the East. In February 1943, as a result of this concentration of volunteers, the 15th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS Latvian No 1 was raised, and this was followed by the raising of the 19th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS Latvian No 2 in early 1944. In the autumn of 1942 an Estonian SS was established, first

known as the 3rd Estonian SS Volunteer Brigade. Further volunteers were called up from Estonia, and in 1944 the 20th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS Estonian No 1 was formed. In the Western Ukraine, the local German authorities were deeply suspicious and only after overcoming considerable differences between themselves were volunteer units raised in 1943. This led to the formation of a new division 14th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS Galician No 1.

Missed opportunities

It should be added that the Cossack Corps was also assigned to the Waffen-SS. It had been organised in 1943 under General von Pannwitz, and during the summer of 1944 the two brigades were upgraded to become the 1st and 2nd Cossack Cavalry Division. In November 1944, the Waffen-SS announced its intention of taking over both and creating a larger formation to be known as XV Cossack Cavalry Corps. The German officers belonging to the corps, however, were not assigned to the Waffen-SS, only attached.

An enormous amount of goodwill and enthusiasm was wasted in these regions by the lack of planning and hesitation on the part of the German authorities. A greater number of volunteers could have been attracted in the Baltic States and the Ukraine if the German authorities had shown a positive and straightforward stance in 1941.

Strangely, given the racial policy of the SS, Muslim volunteers were recruited from the local population in Croatia and Albania. In early 1943, the first Croatian SS volunteer division was formed, which was reorganised into the 13th Waffen Mountain Division of the SS *Handschar* Croatian No 1. A second Croatian Division was formed, being designated 23rd Waffen Mountain Division of the SS *Kama* Croatian No 2, in the summer of 1944. The Albanian National Committee recruited for the Albanian forces, which were made up primarily from conscripts, with only a few volunteers. In the spring of 1944, in conjunction with other units, they raised a division which was later designated the 21st Waffen Mountain Division of the SS *Skanderbeg* Albanian No 1.

Other national units were formed, some of strategic merit, while others were of propaganda value only. These included two Russian divisions, the 29th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS Russian No 1 and the 30th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS Russian No 2, an Italian Waffen-Grenadier Division and a Hungarian, the 25th Waffen-Grenadier Division of the SS *Hunyadi* Hungarian No 1.

The British Freikorps

Finally, of more dubious value was the Tartar Waffen Mountain Brigade of the SS, an East Turkish Waffen-SS unit, the Serbian Volunteer Corps, two Romanian Waffen grenadier regiments, a Bulgarian Waffen-SS grenadier regiment, the Indian Legion, and the *Britische* Freikorps, which was the smallest unit of foreign volunteers.

The idea that prisoners of war could be persuaded to fight in an anti-Bolshevik legion was put forward by John Amery, the eldest son of Leo Amery, Churchill's Minister for India. The German Army was not receptive to the notion at first, as it was opposed to the recruitment of prisoners. A change of heart occurred, and Amery undertook a recruiting tour that yielded only one volunteer. The Germans decided to drop Amery, but not the idea of a British volunteer corps. The propaganda campaign was heightened, yielding about 58 volunteers who were assembled at Hildesheim. The name *Britische* Freikorps was adopted, with the intention that it would appear in October or November 1943. It was sent to Dresden to be trained as an assault engineer unit. In the course of the infamous 'fire storm' raid on the city, it suffered its first casualties when two of its members were killed. The *Britische* Freikorps was sent to Berlin in February 1945 and then assigned to the *Nordland* Division in March. On 13 April Cooper, the senior NCO in charge, went to the headquarters of the *Nordland* Division to discuss the *Britische* Freikorps with the commander, SS-Brigadeführer Ziegler. Cooper briefed Ziegler on the

Right: British Freikorps members, including a youthful Kenneth Berry (left) and Alfred Minchin (centre), complete with Union Jack arm shields and cuff bands. The unit was militarily insignificant.

background to the *Britische* Freikorps, emphasising that most of its members had been press-ganged into joining and that their combat value would be dubious. Ziegler agreed and Steiner's formal consent was sought to withdraw the *Britische* Freikorps from the frontline. Although withdrawn from a combat role the *Britische* Freikorps still had a job to do, and surprisingly enough it soldiered on, continuing with its work of driving trucks, directing traffic and helping with the evacuation of civilian refugees. On 29 April, Steiner told his staff of his decision to break contact with the Russians and ordered his forces to head west into Anglo-American captivity. The *Britische* Freikorps were duly captured and returned to Britain.

The balance sheet

The foreign volunteer programme remained central to the development of the Waffen-SS, but the value of their contribution to the war in Russia varied between excellent and very poor. In the case of the western European volunteers, the SS was able to tap a useful source of high-grade manpower, which the German armed forces would otherwise have found unavailable. The western volunteers fought well on the battlefield, the ultimate criterion for any military organisation. The SS had one major criticism levelled against it, as far as the western volunteers were concerned, which was the inability of its training grounds, officer and NCO schools to readily accommodate non-German recruits, a system weakness that was corrected far too slowly.

SS policy can only be seen as an almost unmitigated disaster with regard to the eastern European volunteers. Given the wide range of nationalities involved, the German suggestion that the invasion of the Soviet Union was a 'European' undertaking to rid the world of Communism was valuable propaganda. The military evaluation is more critical. The small Finnish SS detachments were obviously good soldiers, but would have fought just as well in their own national institutions. The Baltic divisions also fought well, especially in the defence of their homelands, but the remaining units were poor.

The whole programme could have been excused in 1941 or perhaps even as late as 1942 for its propaganda potential, but in 1943, especially after the failure at Kursk, it siphoned off trained officers and NCOs desperately needed elsewhere at a time manpower and material shortages began to bite.

NEW TACTICS FOR A NEW WAR

With the failure of the Kursk Offensive, the Wehrmacht was forced onto the defensive in the East. The Red Army had successfully halted what was to be the last great German offensive on the Eastern Front, and was now poised to begin a massive attack all along the front. The Germans still hoped to maintain the 'Eastern Rampart', the deep defence lines that they hoped would hold the Russians indefinitely. It was upon this that the German High Command relied, a somewhat forlorn hope. The Russians, though, were confident and brimming with other ideas.

The Red Army's main effort was directed at the southern sector, where there were five fronts: Central, Voronezh, Steppe, Southwest and South. It had to push through the eastern Ukraine to reach and cross the River Dnieper. The Kalinin and West Fronts, situated father north, were tasked with pushing forward around Smolensk to hold down large German

Left: Waffen-SS infantry and armour in central Russia, August 1943. The vehicle is a StuG III Ausf G assault gun/tank destroyer armed with a 7.5cm gun.

forces which would be urgently needed elsewhere. STAVKA, the Soviet High Command, had learnt the art of balancing the actions of several fronts, and of establishing great local superiority in designated sectors. The tactical problems of breaking through deep and strongly fortified defensive lines had also been mastered the by Russians. A logistical system capable of re-supplying their armies during the advance to keep up the momentum had also been devised. This was particularly important, as the Germans had undertaken a 'scorched earth' policy, which laid waste towns and villages as they retreated.

After the Battle of Kursk, Red Army tactics focused on strategic and organisational flexibility, with heavy concentrations of artillery, and a broad frontage of attack. When the German line had been breached in one or two places, the main element of the attacking force was transferred into the gap for maximum exploitation. The Wehrmacht and Waffen-SS responded by trying to ensure that the initial Soviet assault struck empty space. They did this by withdrawing units immediately prior to the Red Army attack. To deal with Russian breakthroughs, they held back their tanks for counterattacks after anti-tank weapons had stopped the Russians in the main killing zones.

Tactics on the ground

Fortunately the Germans, and especially the Waffen-SS, had the soldiers for such tactics. On the northeastern front in February 1943, for example, SS-Untersturmführer Gerardus Mooyman, who had joining the SS Volunteer Legion *Nederland* as a gunner in the 14th Anti-tank Company, destroyed more than 15 Russian tanks south of Lake Ladoga with his anti-tank gun. In recognition of his gallantry, he became the first 'Germanic' volunteer in the Waffen-SS to be honoured with the award of the Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross, on 20 February 1943. General Major Fritz von Scholz decorated him personally on 17 March 1943. Subsequently, he was paraded for the press for propaganda purposes, first in Berlin, where he met Dutch journalists on 23 March. He made a number of other photo calls, and met SS-Gruppenführer Reuter and Seyss-Inquart in Holland to help with the recruiting programme in the Low Countries, as well as to bolster flagging morale at home.

Strongpoints were constructed by the German approximately 16km (10 miles) apart, which were expected to hold for 24 hours against Russian attacks. The German troops would then fall back to the next defence line (flank attacks could be launched against those Red Army units deployed to tackle each strongpoint). These tactics were sound, but the Russian advance could never be delayed more than temporarily with this strategy, albeit at heavy cost to Red Army units. The hope that the Red Army would, in Hitler's words, 'some day be exhausted' was totally unrealistic. The Red Army mustered 1400 tanks and over 20,000 artillery pieces during the battles to recapture Smolensk in August and September 1943, compared to the 500 tanks and 8800 artillery pieces the Germans could field.

Waffen-SS deployments

Throughout 1941-43, the élite divisions of the Waffen-SS, the *Leibstandarte* Division, *Das Reich* Division and *Totenkopf* Division, had displayed qualities which the Führer regarded as being essential to victory: a ruthless aggression in attack, with a stolid refusal ever to yield ground. It was perhaps inevitable, therefore, that he should look to these units to save the situation in the East after Kursk. The events in the Mediterranean at this time, however, gave Hitler cause for alarm. The Führer's worst fears concerning Italy were confirmed in the last week of July 1943, when Mussolini's regime finally crumbled. His old ally was placed under arrest, though, and Hitler immediately made plans for rescuing *Il Duce* and for strengthening the German hold on Italy. Marshal Badoglio's new government stated its intention of continuing the war, but no one at the Führer's headquarters, least of all Hitler, believed that. Hitler's initial plan was to transfer II SS Panzer Corps from Army Group South to Italy. He thought that the politically trained

Above: SS-Untersturmführer Geradus Mooyman (right) of the Dutch unit Legion* Nederland *with SS-Standartenführer Hank Feldmeyer. Mooyman won the Knight's Cross for knocking out 15 Russian tanks.

SS divisions could form a nucleus around which the Fascist elements in the Italian Army could rally. After consultation with the commander of Army Group Centre, Hitler decided to send only the II SS Panzer Corps headquarters and the *Leibstandarte* Division. The latter left its equipment, including its Mark IV and VI tanks, at the front to be divided among depleted divisions. Though the *Leibstandarte* Division was sent to Italy, *Das Reich* remained in the Army Group South zone. Subsequently *Das Reich*, the *Totenkopf* Division and III Panzer Corps were sent to Stalino to try to stem the Russian offensive in that sector. But their respite was brief. Having achieved their objective at the beginning of August 1943, they were attacked by the Red Army on 3 August between Orel and Belgorod, which ripped a huge hole in the German line. To halt the collapse of Manstein's left flank, *Das Reich* and

Above: Waffen-SS troops on the retreat as Army Group Centre reels under relentless Russian pressure, autumn 1943. During this period the* Das Reich *and* Totenkopf *Divisions fought superbly to prevent a German collapse.

the *Totenkopf* Division were rushed to the Kharkov area. An attack at Belgorod fell like a thunder clap upon the forces of Hoth's 4th Panzer Army and Army Detachment *Kempf*. It was launched by the Soviet Voronezh and Steppe Fronts: five armies with a superiority in tanks and guns of five to one over the hapless Germans. The latter reeled backwards in total disarray, yielding Belgorod on 5 August. A 48km- (30-mile) wide gap soon appeared in the German line between Hoth's and Kempf's forces, into which the Red Army commander, General Vatutin, poured troops. Kharkov was bypassed by the Soviets, who then swung southwest towards Poltava. Their objective was to cut off Army Group South by taking the crossings over the River Dnieper between Kiev and Zaporozhye.

Field Marshal von Manstein ordered the two Waffen-SS divisions to repulse the Russian attack towards the River Dnieper and stop enemy armour from wheeling south and surrounding Army Detachment *Kempf*, which was holding Kharkov. West of the city, just south of Akhtyrka, the *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions dug in and awaited the Red Army tanks. The Waffen-SS troops prevented the Russians reaching the River Dnieper, but endured ferocious assaults for seven days. Kempf's position became untenable in the city, and to escape encirclement he was forced to abandon Kharkov on 22 August. On Hitler's orders Manstein dismissed him from his command. Kempf's army was now placed under the command of General Otto Wöhler and redesignated the 8th Army. Wöhler's task was to rebuild the German front west of Kharkov, and he was greatly helped in this by the efforts of the *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions. The *Totenkopf* spearheaded an action between 15 and 20 August to encircle and destroy Vatutin's lead elements, which were trying to encircle Kharkov from the west. The *Totenkopf* Division then linked up with the still intact 7th Panzer Division and thus re-established contact with the 4th Panzer Army. The two SS divisions then covered the retreat of the 8th Army, helping to avert a major German disaster.

Retreat to the Dnieper

The fact that the Germans would have to retreat to the natural defence line of the River Dnieper was recognised by Field Marshal Manstein and grudgingly accepted by Hitler in mid-September. The *Totenkopf* Division and *Das Reich* covered the retreat as the 4th Panzer and 8th Armies fell back to the river. However, the Russians had recommenced their attacks, and both Waffen-SS divisions were sorely pressed in preventing the Russians reaching the river as the German troops and vehicles poured over the crossing points. There was still to be no respite for the SS troops, who were now very tired. To the south, a crisis had developed where Russian forces had punched a hole in the German line between the right flank of Wöhler's 8th Army and the left wing of General Hube's 1st Panzer

Army. Krivoi Rog was the rail, supply and communications centre for Army Group South, and now it was in danger. Its loss would have dealt a mortal blow to Army Group South, as vast quantities of supplies were held there.

Below: A brief period of rest before the next frenzied efforts to stem the Red Army. This photograph provides a good example of the seemingly endless Russian terrain encountered on the Eastern Front.

Having smashed the 57th Army Corps and cut the rail link between Dnepropetrovsk and Krivoi Rog, by mid-October the Russians appeared to be within reach of the prize. A reserve force was desperately thrown together by Field Marshal von Manstein: Schörner's 40th Panzer Corps, which included the *Totenkopf* Division, the remnants of the 9th and 11th Panzer Divisions and the 16th Panzergrenadier Division. From north of Krivoi Rog, the 40th Panzer Corps counterattacked on 27 October 1943, spearheaded by the *Totenkopf* Division. After a week of bitter fighting, the Russians were stopped dead in their tracks, losing 500 tanks and 5000 prisoners. They then pulled back, allowing the evacuation of Krivoi Rog four months later, together with all the valuable supplies located there.

Left: Soldiers of the 4th* SS-Polizei *Division digging trenches on the Eastern Front. In March 1943, the nucleus of the division was transferred to Bohemia and Moravia for refitting as a panzer-grenadier division. This was part of a general pattern of upgrading many Waffen-SS divisions in an effort to try to contain the Red Army on the Eastern Front. Hitler, though faced with a grim strategic situation in Russia, was still convinced that the Waffen-SS could give him ultimate victory in Russia. This view was not shared by the troops at the front, and illustrates how detached Hitler had become from reality. The truth was that the Waffen-SS was stretched to the limit staving off defeat.

The superior fighting qualities of the Waffen-SS divisions were proved time after time, but there was always a heavy price to pay. Hausser's II SS Panzer Corps lost over 400 tanks at Kursk alone. Such losses in equipment, in addition to that suffered in personnel, would have quickly exhausted the Waffen-SS had it not have been for Hitler's decision to substantially expand the organisation.

The expansion was in three areas. First, the élite Waffen-SS units, the *Leibstandarte*, *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions, together with the *Wiking* Division, were to be upgraded to panzer divisions. Second, recognising that the war in the East could not be brought to a speedy end, it seemed sensible to increase the number of SS divisions of all types. Finally, Hitler decided that such was the worth of the best SS divisions that they should be formed into a central reserve, which would intervene in critical situations, such as at Kharkov in early 1943.

New Waffen-SS panzer divisions

The decision to increase the number of SS divisions was not taken lightly, for Hitler still wanted to preserve the exclusivity of the SS. However, Stalingrad forced him to authorise the creation of new divisions. On New Year's Eve 1942, Hitler agreed to the creation of two new armoured divisions, although originally they were designated as mechanised infantry divisions, numbered the 9th and 10th and named after two heroes of German military history. The division, which was later to be named 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen*, was formed without name in January 1943. The second was simply identified as the 10th division of the Waffen-SS. In spite of the fact that Hitler did not like the name, the division was called 'Karl der Grosse' in April 1943. By 3 October 1943, Hitler named the unit after a historical figure more to his liking – 'Frundsberg' – and the division was now titled 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg*. Himmler was forced to recruit native Germans for the first time to staff them. The third SS armoured division, the 12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend*, was created from the 1926 class of the Hitler Youth. In parallel to the additions to the Reichsdeutsch formations, a recruiting drive created the eastern European SS. Though undoubtedly necessary, it effectively destroyed Himmler's guidelines of racial selection.

The *Wiking* Division had remained on the defensive in the Caucasus during the winter of 1942-43 and into the following spring. On 22

March, the *Nordland* Regiment was withdrawn from the division and used as a cadre for a new SS division. The Scandinavian regiment was merged with two existing SS Germanic legions and a large number of west and southeastern European volunteers to form the SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland*. During the summer the Estonian SS-Bataillon *Narwa* was attached to the *Wiking* Division where it remained until July 1944, when it was transferred to the Estonian 20th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS. The summer and autumn found the division constantly on the defensive in the area from Kharkov to the River Dnieper.

Dedicated anti-Communist soldiers were needed to replace battle casualties, and units were needed to safeguard rear areas against partisans, who had sprung up everywhere in eastern Europe from 1942 onwards. This resulted in a plethora of different national groups wearing Waffen-SS uniform.

The Latvians raised the 15th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS, which first fought on the Eastern Front in November 1943. It put up a spirited resistance against relentless Russian assaults, being driven westwards in the face of the Red Army. The Estonians, too, provided a rich seam of recruits for the SS.

The Waffen-SS comes of age

As the situation on the Eastern Front worsened, Hitler came to depend even more on his SS divisions. By the end of 1943, seven of his 30 panzer divisions were Waffen-SS and five of his panzergrenadier divisions wore SS uniforms. The *Leibstandarte* Division made the journey between East and West no less than seven times, making a major assault on each arrival. In November 1943, for example, newly returned from Italy, it led an assault which restored the Dnieper front.

By early February 1943, the retreating *SS-Polizei* Division took over its newly assigned position west of Kopino, where it had to repulse a number of fierce Russian onslaughts. With a lull along the whole front in March, the nucleus of the division was transferred to training areas in Silesia and Bohemia and Moravia for refitting as a panzergrenadier division. The remaining portions of the division had been reduced to the Battle Group *SS-Polizei*, which played a defensive role in the northern portion of the Eastern Front from April 1943 until 21 May 1944.

The massive expansion of the Waffen-SS from 1943 did not generally lead to a commensurate rise in military prowess. Those units which had been established before 1943 were without doubt the best, with the eastern European formations and Volksdeutsche varying in performance from very poor to excellent. The backbone of the Waffen-SS was its panzer divisions; their leadership, training, equipment and morale were such that they postponed the ultimate defeat of the Third Reich. The west European divisions – Danes, Dutch, Belgians, French and Norwegians – fought well, though numerically they formed the smallest group among Himmler's legions. Though theoretically a massive pool of recruits, the Volksdeutsche proved disappointing. Volksdeutsche personnel, it was said, used their alleged inability to understand the German language as an excuse to avoid unpleasant or dangerous assignments. Theodor Eicke was particularly scathing about them, even going as far as accusing them of cowardice. The barometer that could be used to gauge a Waffen-SS unit's military efficiency was usually the amount of Volksdeutsche personnel it contained: the greater the ratio the less its combat efficiency.

Despite all the efforts, the floodgates in the East burst open in 1944, and the Waffen-SS was caught in the deluge and swept west. Despite almost superhuman efforts, it could not carry out Hitler's wishes to hold the line; nor could it prevent the Russians reaching the very borders of the Third Reich itself.

Right: The strain begins to show. Fatigue was rife in the élite Waffen-SS divisions on the Eastern Front in the second half of 1943, as they were rushed from one trouble spot to another to deal with Red Army attacks.

THE DIRTY WAR

As Hitler's élite troops, the Waffen-SS were charged with making the Führer's dream of racial purity come true. In the East, there were two main strands to this dream: the extermination of the Jews and the destruction of Bolshevism. The Einsatzgruppen were established prior to the invasion of Poland. The Führer's social plan for Poland was simple, radical and horribly effective: the liquidation of the country's cultural and political élite; it was also to be the testing ground for the larger plan – the destruction of the Jews and other 'undesirables' who inhabited the Soviet Union. With the conquest of Russia, Hitler's dream of racial purity for the world and the eradication of Bolshevism, 'a social criminality' in his mind, could be achieved.

The SS was also charged with the conduct of the anti-partisan war in the East and the Balkans. Initially, the responsibility for combating the partisan menace had rested with the army, but control was given to the Waffen-SS in October 1942, with SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS und Polizei Erich von dem Bach-Zelewski designated Chief of Anti-Partisan Warfare. He was given the title of Bevollmächtiger für die Bandenbekämpfung im Osten, or Plenipotentiary for the Combating of Partisans in the East. In 1943 this was changed to Chef der Bandenkampfverbände, or Chief of Anti-Partisan Formations.

Left: Suspected partisans and collaborators hanged by the Germans in Volokolamsk, near Moscow, in the winter of 1941. Bodies were left hanging as a warning to others.

Bach-Zelewski was senior SS and police leader in the Central Army Group area in Russia during 1941-2, and it was during this time he was involved in the liquidation of Jews and Bolsheviks. On becoming head of all anti-partisan units, he was directly responsible to Himmler himself.

Throughout the period of their spectacular triumphs in the Soviet Union, the German forces were also fighting a second campaign: a savage phantom war against the partisans. It was not a conflict which began spontaneously, for large sections of the population greeted the Germans who drove deep into the Soviet Union in 1941 as liberators who would free them from the Stalinist yoke.

The partisans – a shaky start

Before the war, while still in the process of communising the country, the Soviet Government had been totally opposed to the concept of 'a nation in arms'. Thus at first any resistance movements that were in place did not take up arms against the invaders, but acted simply as couriers and agents. Their numbers were small and they possessed sophisticated techniques, which required considerably ingenuity on the part of the security police to track them down.

Many Russian people adopted a 'wait and see attitude' about whether their government would survive or not. In fact, in the beginning there were two collaborators for every partisan. But the growth of the partisan movement was helped by the ruthlessness of the Russian guerrilla organisation towards collaborators, and by the savagery meted out by the Germans in the occupied areas.

There was no special equipment available or stocks of weapons, clothing, food and medical supplies. Neither the many experienced partisans who had participated in the Russian Civil War of 1918-21, nor those who had fought in the Spanish Civil War, were employed against the Germans. Indeed, many had been discredited as 'enemies of the people' and shot in the purges. The absence of training for partisan warfare, both theoretical and practical, together with the lack of any clear thought as to how the leadership should be organised, led to disagreement between the Soviet leaders early in the war. Some insisted on the creation of large formations, which should operate in accordance with the plans of the central military leadership. Others held the view that numerous small detachments receiving only general coordination and support from the High Command would prove more effective.

On 29 June 1941, the Central Committee of the Communist Party and the Soviet Government in Moscow issued a belated call to arms, in a directive that first gave reference to the need to organise partisan and sabotage activity in German-occupied territory. It was addressed to all party and government bodies in the western districts of the country, and in a radio speech delivered by Stalin on 3 July the entire population was called upon: 'To set up partisan cavalry and infantry detachments and sabotage groups in enemy occupied areas for the struggle against units of the enemy army, to inflame partisan warfare everywhere and at all times, to blow up bridges and roads, to spoil telephone communications, to set fire to forests, warehouses and wagons, to create unbearable conditions in the occupied areas for the enemy and all who helped him, to pursue and destroy them at every step, to disrupt everything they do.'

The defence of Mother Russia

At the same time, the directive demanded the establishment of 'destroyer' battalions, formed from the most loyal members of the civilian population and charged with preventing panic and disorganisation in areas near the front: 'We must organise a merciless struggle against all disorganisers of our rear, deserters, alarmists, rumour-mongers, and destroy spies, saboteurs, and enemy paratroops, cooperating speedily with our destroyer battalions in all this. The war with Nazi Germany must not be looked on as an ordinary war. It is not merely a war between two armies, it is also a great war of the whole Soviet people against the German forces.'

This was not only a call to the people to develop partisan warfare in the rear of the German forces, but also a threat that those who did not participate in the 'war of the whole Soviet people' would be regarded as traitors.

However, Stalin's speech did not arouse or inspire the Soviet people. No spontaneous anti-German movement arose in the occupied areas, so organisation of a partisan movement only continued along two lines: through the party organisation and that of the secret police. The Germans, on the other hand, made somewhat better use of local groups opposed either to Stalin's government or to the racially dominated 'Muscovite' Russians, who provided the troops for anti-partisan operations. The terrain in the Soviet Union was rarely as favourable for partisan operations as it was in Yugoslavia, but the sheer cruelty of the German occupation eventually fanned a vigorous resistance movement into life and alienated many who were potential allies.

German organisation in the East

Yet despite the killings, the deportations and imposition of a brutal military occupation, the Germans had little difficulty in finding volunteers to act as auxiliaries and behind-the-line security troops. The most enthusiastic of these were the non-Slavic people on the periphery of the Soviet Union: the Balts, Caucasians, Georgians, Turkomens and Cossacks. As the war progressed, they were joined by Ukrainians and Russians, and in many Ukrainian and Russian towns the action groups found willing helpers among the racial Germans, indigenous self-defence forces and militia. After the first wave of action, the Special Action Groups settled down to maintain security in the newly occupied territories, where they set up a static territorial organisation, which was in fact a miniature Reich Central Security Department (RSHA) in the field, with SD, Gestapo and Kripo (Criminal Police) representatives under a Commander of Security Police and SD. Under each commander were a number of local commanders of Security Police and SD. Towards the end of the

Above: Erich von dem Bach-Zelewski, senior SS and Police Leader in Army Group Centre's area in Russia. Head of all anti-partisan units, he had a nervous breakdown in 1942 due to the atrocities committed in Russia.

war, it was estimated that as many as a million citizens from the Soviet Union had taken up arms against their Communist government

On 18 July 1941, the Communist Party Central Committee issued a directive on organising the struggle in the rear of the German

forces. It ordered that underground party committees be set up on occupied territory, with the job of ensuring that partisan and subversive activity was developed in their areas. Responsibility for this was laid on local party and government leaders, especially on first secretaries of party organisations. The directive ordered the immediate preparation of underground party bodies and partisan detachments in areas close to the front, and the selection of the most loyal persons in the area to staff them.

Partisan detachments of 75-100 men, and sabotage groups of 30-50 men were to be organised primarily in areas where main enemy forces were concentrated, but it was intended to have at least one of each in every administrative division. The main targets for partisan detachments were columns and garrisons of enemy motorised infantry, transport

Left: Immediately following the Wehrmacht into Russia in June 1941 came the Einsatzgruppen, the SS Special Action Groups, intent on liquidating Communists, Jews, 'undesirables' and anyone else who fell foul of SS racial guidelines. Each Einsatzgruppe numbered less than 3000 men and a few women, and one wonders how they managed to murder nearly 500,000 Jews and gypsies alone during the first six months of the Russian Campaign, in addition to numerous Russian commissars who were captured. However, they were enthusiastically helped in their grisly task by locally raised volunteer units, especially in Latvia, Lithuania and Estonia.

in general, airfields, and communications. For the sabotage groups, the main targets were telephone lines, stores of war material, small groups of soldiers, single lorries and tanks, the killing of officers, seizure of documents, and the spreading of rumours aimed at causing uncertainty and alarm among enemy troops. The killing of officers was a very high priority, for it was a prime objective of Stalinist ideals. During the Polish Campaign, for example, the Soviet forces also interacted with the German forces, adding to the final destruction of Poland. The Soviets had a plan for the destruction of the Polish officer corps and other intellectuals, and this led to vast numbers of deportations and executions. On 13 April 1943, Radio Berlin announced that a mass grave of 10,000 Polish officers had been discovered in Katyn Forest near Smolensk. They had been methodically and expertly shot by pistol in the back of the head by the NKVD (Russian Secret Police) in the spring of 1940. The German report was somewhat inaccurate – in fact 4500 Polish officers whom the Russians had failed to indoctrinate were murdered.

Retribution

The urban counterparts of the partisan detachments and sabotage groups were the networks of conspiratorial groups and agents established by the Communist Party, plus independent networks set up by the Internal Affairs and State Security Services. Their tasks were sabotage, terrorism and intelligence, and they often posed as collaborators in order to penetrate German military and administrative installations, preserving strict secrecy and avoiding contact with the partisans. One example is recorded in *The Moscow Tram Stop* and gives an account of a prominent young female partisan who was active in late 1941. She was interrogated by the German army and subsequently given duties at headquarters. An attractive girl, she soon won the favours of her new friends. But 'Tanya' was exposed and taken out by the Germans with a plaque round her neck proclaiming her crimes, hanged publicly in front of an audience of soldiers and left as a stark reminder to others. Group hangings were not uncommon. A small boy was shot through the head for possessing a pigeon and his body put on display. In the early months of the war, about 70 per cent of partisans were party or youth league members; because of their inexperience many of them, especially the active Communists, were captured and killed.

Desertion was a serious problem for the Soviets everywhere. In Smolensk Province, for

example, over 6000 party and youth league members remained to operate in the German rear. But only 2000 were operational in 40 partisan detachments in the area by the autumn of 1941. And although 75 destroyer battalions, with a strength of 10,000, were raised in Orel province before the arrival of the Germans, only 2300 remained when they arrived, and during the ensuing three weeks some detachments disintegrated altogether, while others moved into Soviet-controlled territory.

Many soldiers who hid in towns, villages and forests in large numbers became apathetic after separation from their units. A partisan commander later wrote: 'Our Communists lost heart and some took conspiratorial activity to determine how best to hide themselves.' Anti-German activity was limited in these circumstances. Even the mighty Bryansk Forest only housed some 2500 partisans in the the first few months of the war.

The partisans of the Moscow region provided something of an exception. A staff of the partisan movement, 12 underground district committees and 40 partisan detachments with their bases were set up before the German forces reached the area. They had a hard core of 1500 party members, plus 300 members of the Youth League. They operated actively, attacking even German garrisons, and suffered heavy casualties as a result.

Increased partisan activity

The Germans had under their control about 70,000,000 Russian people by December 1941. At this time there were only about 30,000 partisans in this region, but this rapidly rose to an approximate 80,133 men organised in 661 detachments by 1 July 1942. The level of activity was still deemed unsatisfactory by the Soviet Central Staff, and on 1 August 1942 an immediate increase was demanded to aid the troops at the front. An amnesty was proclaimed on 12 August for all collaborators who ended their activities, while partisan commanders were ordered to kill those who continued.

The Belorussian and Bryansk Forest partisans responded by blowing up strongly guarded railway bridges over the rivers Desna, Ptich and Drissa, together with other railway installations. The German General Directorate of Railway 'East' reported that due to partisan action, accidents increased from 90 in March to 180 in June, 315 in August and 342 in September, and from August 1942 approximately 200 locomotives were neutralised every month. The increased activity reduced train speeds, movements by night, and led to an increase in patrols and the building of fortifications on important bridges and main lines.

The Kovpak and Saburov Brigades

The scale of partisan activity was the focus of high-level discussion in Moscow at the end of August 1942, when about 20 commanders of the largest partisan brigades were summoned to a conference on subversive activity by the Central Staff. Stalin received the group on 31 August, which also conferred in the Kremlin with the Soviet leaders, who stated: 'The partisan movement, despite its obvious successes, has not yet become as massive as it could be.' They were ordered to create new partisan reserves in every village, and to direct efforts primarily against the Germans' long lines of communication.

The two largest brigades, commanded by S. Kovpak and A. Saburov, with over 1000 men, raided from the Bryansk Forests to the west bank of the Dnieper and on to the thinly wooded southwestern Ukraine. The main German communication lines lay in these regions. The raids had three distinct objectives: to create a diversion, to represent Soviet power, and to inflame the population against the Germans. At the end of October, the Kovpak and Saburov Brigades moved out, after being supplied by air with food, clothing, weapons, explosives, radios and portable printing presses. The important Ukrainian railway junction of Sarny was attacked, plus five bridges leading near it, were blown up by Kovpak's Brigade in December. Kovpak's Brigade was encircled by the Germans during a raid into the western Ukraine in summer 1943. Vershigora, head of intelligence, suggested that it should break out

Above: Suspected partisans being led away following a German anti-guerrilla sweep in the Bryansk area in 1943. Guilty or not, all of them would be shot by firing squad after a series of brutal interrogations.

in small groups, taking different directions and assemble in an appointed place later, but many partisan leaders did not trust their men enough to permit them to disperse. The brigade commissar rejected the plan, though, because it would destroy the team, which had been created and held together by strict discipline over two years.

A number of small, passive partisan detachments existed, which contributed little to the struggle. These were compelled to integrate with active units for the sake of discipline and energetic action. In some cases their commanders refused, preferring an easy existence in the village or forest hide-outs. These commanders were shot and their units forcibly integrated. Penetration by German agents and collaborators was minimised by the institution of rigorous checks on new recruits. The latter carried out only auxiliary duties performed under constant surveillance. If it transpired they had an 'unclean' past or had behaved disloyally, they and their families were shot, their property confiscated or destroyed, and their houses burned.

Army Group Centre's communications were the priority of the Bryansk Forest partisans, who even undertook a joint operation in February 1943 with the Bryansk Front air forces. The air force attacked the stations,

Above: SS-Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Suhr, who is wearing the Anti-Partisan War Badge below and to the left of the Iron Cross on his left-breast pocket. Few pictures of individuals wearing this award are extant.

while the partisans blew up a number of railway tracks, especially on the Bryansk-to-Karachev line. On the Gomel-to-Bryansk line, a 300m- (990ft-) long bridge over the Desna was blown up in March, frustrating Army Group Centre's preparations for the summer offensive in July 1943.

Several operations were mounted against the partisans of Belorussia and the Bryansk Forest during the summer of 1942, but they were only partially successful. Partisan detachments increased from 661 to 1061 between the summers of 1942 and 1943. With the increased activity against their communications, the Germans renewed attempts to eradicate the partisans. Up to 60,000 German troops took part in large operations in the Bryansk Forest in the spring and summer of 1943, but with little effect. The German General Directorate of Railway 'East' reports show that partisan attacks increased from about 500 in February 1943 to 1045 in May, 1060 in June, and 1460 in July. Behind Army Group Centre alone, partisans blew up 44 bridges and damaged 298 locomotives and 1223 wagons during June 1943.

The Jewish 'question'

Hitler realised that the extermination of the Jews in the East was no undertaking for regular soldiers, so Himmler was ordered to form units to follow the invading German troops to undertake these liquidations. They were called Einsatzgruppen. Himmler entrusted this mission of mass killing to mobile Sicherheitsdienst (SD) and Sicherheitspolizei (Sipo) – SS Security Service – detachments. In preparation for the planned expansion eastwards, SS-Obergruppenführer Heydrich commissioned Walter Schellenberg, one of his most brilliant protégés, to work out a plan for fusing the state organisation, the Sipo, the Security Serive on which the Gestapo depended, with the party organisation, the SD, an organisation which would oversee the Einsatzgruppen in Poland and eventually the Soviet Union when 'Barbarossa' was launched. A project of this nature did not appeal to everybody, particularly not to the head of the Gestapo, Werner Best, who wanted to preserve the distinction between State and the Party. But with such strong patronage, the organisation to be known as Reichssicherheitshauptamt (RSHA) – Reich Central Security Department – came into being in September 1939. Its formation was based on a compromise: certain of its sections were placed under state authority and others under that of the party.

For the 1939 Polish Campaign, six Einsatzgruppen of 400 to 600 men each were formed. One was assigned to each of the five invading armies, while a sixth unit was deployed in the border province of Poznan, a former Prussian territory that Hitler intended to reclaim for the Reich. As the German Army raced across Poland, the SS followed, performing with

vigour its part in the destruction of that nation. Behind the advancing Wehrmacht and SS, hastily improvised reception camps were constructed. The Einsatzgruppen worked methodically from previously prepared lists of names. Government officials, local political leaders, aristocrats, priests, business people, teachers and physicians were prime targets for murder, as were the Jews. All who could be found were rounded up and herded into these camps, where execution by shooting usually took place soon afterwards. A German diplomat wrote in his diary that, 'the SS reign of terror in Poland progressed efficiently'. Seven days after the invasion, a death toll of 200 Poles a day was claimed by SS commanders, and 20 days later SS-Obergruppenführer Heydrich was able to announce: 'Of the Polish upper classes in the occupied territories only a maximum of three per cent is still present.'

The Home Defence units

Another variety of death squads, the so-called 'Home Defence' units, soon began operating alongside the Einsatzgruppen. They consisted of ethnic Germans who had been objects of German-Polish rivalry since the inception of the Polish State. In the days immediately after the invasion a brief hate campaign was waged by Poles, who sacked German farms and houses. At least 5000 Germans were murdered, and possibly as many as 50,000 were forced from their homes in western Poland. As soon as the Wehrmacht had rolled past, men from the German minority banded together in volunteer militias bent upon killing Poles in revenge. In western Prussia anti-Polish feeling was rife, and here Albert Forster, the Gauleiter of Danzig, did everything he could to fan the flames of hatred.

Himmler, who always protected what he regarded as his domain, dispatched Gottlob Berger, the Chief of Recruiting, to take charge and bring the Home Defence units under SS control. This was an important factor in the control of the auxiliary units that were to be taken over or formed in the occupied areas of the Soviet Union. These units were divided into four groups and each assigned a German SS commander. Though they were to serve as auxiliary police forces, some units continued on their murderous endeavours, causing even Heydrich to show concern. Evidently the poor discipline worried him more than the lack of humanity shown by these new SS men.

The SS-Totenkopfverbände made no tactical contribution to the German victory in Poland. As the SS-Verfügungstruppe received its baptism of fire, the SS-Totenkopfverbände received its initiation in blood, being employed in terrorising the civilian population through acts that included hunting down straggling Polish soldiers, and torturing and murdering

Below: The Anti-Partisan War Badge was introduced on 30 January 1944. It came in bronze, silver and gold for 30, 75 or 100 combat days respectively. Himmler awarded the first four gold badges in February 1945.

large numbers of Poland's population. Eicke gave Berger the title of Höhere SS und Polizei Führer HSSPF, or Higher SS and Police Leader, for the regions of Poland, making him accountable to Himmler alone for his measures in 'pacifying' the conquered areas.

A trusted Eicke subordinate, SS-Standartenführer Paul Nostitz, commander of the SS-Totenkopf Standarte *Brandenburg*, carried out his orders thoroughly and fanatically. On 13 September *Brandenburg* moved into Poland to begin 'cleansing and security measures', which provided a fitting introduction to the character of German rule during the three weeks it was on active duty in Poland (and was an ominous foretaste of things to come in the Baltic States and Soviet Union). They secured villages from 'insurgents', conducted house searches and arrested large numbers of 'suspicious elements'. SS-Standartenführer Nostitz eagerly described in his report how insurgents, plunderers, Poles and Jews were quickly liquidated in large numbers, many of whom were shot 'while trying to escape'.

The disgust of the army

The 'cleansing and security measures' that occurred during and after the Polish Campaign engendered an attitude of uneasiness, shock and disgust among responsible senior officers of the German Army. General Boehm-Tettelbach recorded these feelings in his report to the 8th Army, in which he remarked that *Brandenburg* had the prime objective of taking violent action against the Jews. Nostitz's repeated refusal to perform normal security duties was cited to support his claims. The general also highlighted how SS-Gruppenführer Pancke had said openly that the SS had special tasks to perform that were outside the competence of the army, and therefore the SS-Totenkopfverbände would not obey army orders. The reports undoubtedly reached Colonel-General Blaskowitz, who loathed the Death's Head units. His knowledge of the atrocities committed transformed him into the army's most bitter critic of SS behaviour in Poland. As a protest, he composed a long memorandum cataloguing the crimes committed by the SS-Totenkopfverbände in Poland and sent it to Generaloberst von Brauchitsch, the German Army Commander-in-Chief.

German soldiers began to question the activities of the SS. Because of this, the SS's heinous enterprises were often camouflaged by such euphemisms as 'counter-espionage work' in an attempt to keep them secret from their own regular forces.

Preparations for Russia

The 14th Army's operational section reported on 20 September 1939 that the 'troops are especially incensed that instead of fighting at the front young men should be demonstrating their courage against defenceless civilians'. In the Operational Zone the Einsatzgruppen were technically under army command, and more than one senior Wehrmacht officer became worried by the consequences. Admiral Wilhelm Canaris, the Chief of the Abwehr, or military intelligence, told the High Command: 'the world will one day hold the Wehrmacht responsible for these methods, since these things are taking place under its nose.' But most generals were prepared to turn a blind eye to the dirty work of the SS.

At the end of March 1940, the German military machine was swept into a new and terrible 'planning phase' when Hitler revealed what his 'crusade against Bolshevism' involved. On 30 March, in a two-and-a-half-hour speech, Hitler addressed the commanders of the three services and some 250 senior officers selected for 'Barbarossa', and made plain his commitment to a war of extermination, not merely a conquest. In this gigantic clash of ideology, knightly virtues would have no place, for Bolshevism was 'a social criminality'. All Bolshevik commissars and Communist intelligentsia must be put to death, and no personal scruple could stand in the way.

Himmler had been granted substantial and independent powers over occupied territory in the East, and on 3 March took responsibility for 'certain tasks which stem from the necessity finally to settle the conflict between the two

Above: Members of an auxiliary unit raised to assist the Einsatzgruppen with uniformed German police officer in the Ukraine. Note the skull in front of the blackboard, no doubt provided by one of the unit's victims.

opposing political systems'. The 'Instructions on Special Matters', (Annexe to Directive 21), the OKW directive of 13 March 1941, laid down Himmler's special freedom of action, and decreed the division of occupied Russia into 'ethnographic areas' following the army group divisions: Baltic, Belorussia and Ukraine. Each was to be ruled by Reichskommissars, who were to take over as rapidly as possible. Their responsibility lay directly to the Führer, and the coordination of 'the economic administration' of military operational and rear administrative zones alike was assigned to Göring. Military rule exercised by the army was therefore severely limited in both time and scope

The 'special tasks' would be carried out in the military rear and General Wagner, Quartermaster General, discussed with Heydrich the terms of the relationship between the military and SD. On 26 March 1940, a draft order covering this arrangement and the eventual operations of the Einsatzgruppen in the army's rear areas was published. Hitler's speech put Communist Party commissars, officials, military personnel and civilians beyond any law, save one which automatically sentenced them to summary execution. Commissars when captured would be shot out

Left: 'Here he stops at nothing, and in his vileness he becomes so gigantic that no one need be surprised if among our people the personification of the devil as the symbol of all evil assumes the living shape of the Jew.' (Hitler:* Mein Kampf*) In Nazi eyes the Slavs and Jews battled for top spot in the list of 'sub-humanity'. The result was murder on a mass scale once the war in the East began. Himmler was informed on 23 March 1943 that 633,000 Jews, such as the one shown here, in Russia had been 'resettled', the euphemism for extermination. With regard to the Slav, the SS issued a brochure entitled* The Sub-Human *which stated: '[the sub-human] is a frightful creature, a caricature of a man with features similar to those of a human being but intellectually and morally lower than any animal.' This Jewish man has been dressed in religious robes prior to being shot.

of hand, if not by German combat troops then by the Einsatzgruppe to whom they would be handed over, or, as the draft of the infamous Commissar Order put it: 'Political leaders and commissars who are captured will not be sent to the rear.'

Another directive on the 'coordinated execution' of 'special tasks' in the East was published at the end of March. The army's first Special Directives, dated 3 April, was issued by General Wagner on this basis, restricting the army's responsibility to its already limited zone. The boundaries of the military conscience had also to be fixed or forgotten. Further wrangling between the SS and OKW took place before an agreement which stated that 'the Einsatzgruppen are authorised, within the framework of their task and on their own responsibility, to take executive measures affecting the civilian population'. The zones and conditions in which the Einsatzgruppen could operate were laid down by Generaloberst von Brauchitsch, the Commander-in-Chief of the Army, on 28 April 1941. The operational zones were divided into four, with an Einsatzgruppe in each: Einsatzgruppe A, assigned to operations in Latvia, Lithuania and Estonia and commanded by SS-Gruppenführer Stahlecker; B, assigned to the Baltic states and the Ukraine, commanded by SS-Gruppenführer Nebe; C, assigned to the Ukraine south of B, commanded by SS-Oberführer Rasch; and D, taking the remainder of the Ukraine, commanded by SS-Gruppenführer Ohlendorf. The order also empowered them to take executive measures against civilians as long as they did not interfere with military operations.

The first atrocities

A number of different departments, offices and units of the SD, Waffen-SS and Order Police provided personnel for the Einsatzgruppen, which were armed with light automatic weapons. Vast distances were covered by the fully motorised Einsatzgruppen, which followed so closely in the wake of the advancing German troops that often SD and Gestapo personnel became involved in the fighting.

In the days following the invasion, one of the first atrocities occurred on the Soviet frontier at the village of Virbalis. Along a 5km (3.12-mile) length of anti-tank trench, Jews were forced to lie down before being exterminated by machine-gun fire. This was repeated seven times. The children were spared, only to be held by the legs, their heads smashed against stones, and then buried alive.

Mass murder

The Einsatzgruppen fanned out behind the frontline, which had by now penetrated deep into the Soviet Union. Here they killed with a ferocity and intensity all who came into their clutches: political functionaries or commissars, active Communists, looters, saboteurs, agents of the NKVD, traitorous ethnic Germans, 'unwanted' elements, carriers of epidemics, members of Russian partisan bands, armed insurgents, partisan helpers, rebels, agitators, young vagabonds, and Jews in general. The licence given to the Einsatzgruppen for their programme of slaughter appeared to know no bounds.

A look at the Einsatzgruppen commanders gives a depth to the enormity of the horrors wreaked upon the occupied territories. SS-Gruppenführer Franz-Walter Stahlecker, for example, was an 'information officer' in the SD in 1938 and went on to become Head of Section VIa of the Reich Main Security Office. At the beginning of 1942 Heydrich got rid of Stahlecker by dubiously promoting him to the command of Einsatzgruppe A. Heydrich's reports claimed that Stahlecker's group had liquidated 221,000 victims. It is possible, however, that such figures were reached carelessly, with the same totals being added several times over. Heydrich nevertheless would have benefited from this misrepresentation, firstly by demonstrating his personal success in the 'Final Solution', and secondly to neutralise Nebe, who is said to have fought against Heydrich's orders. These calculations allowed Himmler to contrast Nebe's quite 'modest' score of 46,000 executions against Stahlecker's massive 221,000.

Transcripts of German police radio messages, the so-called 'Incident Reports' detailing the massacre of thousands of Soviet Jews, show that the German Ordnungspolizei (Orpo) – the uniformed Order Police – were massacring Jews as early as June 1941, several months before the 'Final Solution' was thought to have begun.

During the summer of 1941, the Einsatzgruppen commanders radioed a triumphal tally of their killings back to Berlin. The most horrifying figures were in the last week of August, when 12,361 Ukrainian Jews were executed. Another report, from Lithuania, stated that 'about 500 Jews, among other saboteurs, are currently being liquidated every day'. Most were killed by police rather than the SS. The Ordnungspolizei messages dried up in September after Daluege, Chief of Police, warned his commanders that the enemy might be listening and told them to send details of all future 'executions' to Berlin by courier. On 19 December 1941, a report from Einsatzgruppe B stated: 'In checks on the exit roads from Ogilev, carried out with the assistance of the Ordnungspolizei, a total of 135 people, most of them Jews, were seized.'

Murderous ingenuity

In May 1942, the Commander of Security Police and SD in Lublin formed a Sondereinsatzgruppe, or 'Special Action Group', which was to disguise itself as a partisan band and assist the security forces in the maintenance of order. This unit was intended to carry out large-scale looting and reprisals in the name of the partisans, and thus discredit the partisan movement in the eyes of the local inhabitants. It also took part in anti-Jewish operations. On 23 July 1942, the police chief in Kamenetz reported that in 'the Jewish action, 700 incapable of working have been shot'.

But large-scale death by shooting had had its day. By the winter of 1941-42 the Einsatzgruppen leaders were feeling the effects of the murders. Nebe was a mere shadow of himself and on the verge of a nervous breakdown. Himmler travelled to Minsk to encourage his executioners, but when he attended a shooting he nearly collapsed. SS-Obergruppenführer Bach-Zelewski pressed Himmler to reserve any momentary sympathy not for the victims, but for the executioners who had to carry out such work. Shortly after this visit Himmler instructed Nebe to develop another method of killing. Nebe agreed, for the psychological effect on those who had to carry out the executions was very great. He began experimenting with killing people, in one case 80 inhabitants of a lunatic asylum, using exhaust gas from his car, an eight-cylinder Horch. He went about the task with an enthusiasm that he was incapable of keeping to himself. He was a keen amateur film maker, and after the war footage showing a gas chamber, worked by the exhaust of a lorry, was found in his Berlin flat.

Auxiliary units

Not only was the destruction of life the primary objective of the SS, but the confiscation of property and valuables belonging to its victims in the conquered states was also of paramount importance. SS-Obergruppenführer Joachim von Ribbentrop, the German Foreign Minister, commanded a special SS battalion which plundered works of art and sent them back to Berlin. The messages also give a clue to the disappearance of the legendary Amber Room, looted from one of the Tsar's palaces near Leningrad by the Germans. They refer to a 'Special SS Battalion' set up to loot treasures from occupied countries, being responsible for dismantling the gold and amber-clad room and taking it to Germany, where it later disappeared before the Allies invaded.

The auxiliary police units were first established by the German Army. The Einsatzgruppen following closely behind immediately took over the existing auxiliary units, or formed their own with recruits from ethnic

Right: The executioners toy with one of their victims during the SS's war against 'sub-humanity' in Russia. This Jew will make his way to a large pit to be shot; he will be but one of hundreds, maybe thousands.

Germans, pro-Germans in general, and reliable members of the defunct Soviet militia. They had various names, such as Ortsmiliz, Miliz, Ordnungsdienst, Bürgerwehr and Selbstschutz. Once the Einsatzgruppen became static, auxiliaries were deployed primarily as interpreters and guards, while the Order Police absorbed some of the rank and file. The indigenous population continued to be the subject of recruitment by both police and army, who employed

Above: Eager civilians in Latvia or Estonia receive orders from an auxiliary about the digging of graves to hold the corpses of Jews. It is a sad fact that Nazism tapped a rich anti-Semitic vein in the Soviet Union.

them in similar roles and later as anti-partisan fighters. These units were often unreliable, being haphazardly formed, ill-disciplined, badly equipped and poorly trained.

The situation behind the front deteriorated to such an extent, particularly in Belorussia's heavily wooded regions, that guidelines for combating the partisan menace in the eastern territories had to be issued by OKW. It was the first official recognition that Soviet citizens had been trained and armed to fight in the rear of the German forces.

According to Himmler's orders of 6 November 1941, all auxiliaries were to be mustered into auxiliary police units. These were known as Schutzmannschaften, officially abbreviated to Schutz.-Btl., or more commonly Schuma. Btl. These battalions were placed at the disposal of the Order Police commander and the HSSPF (Higher SS Police Force). A six-month engagement was stipulated for recruits from Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania and Ukraine.

The Reichskommissars

The Ministry for Occupied Eastern Territories received the administration of the areas behind the front from the military, and began to incorporate four massive Reichskommissariat. However, the military situation at the front dictated that only two were actually created: Reichskommissariat Ostland, consisting of Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania, Belorussia, and much of the Ukraine; and the Reichskommissariat Ukraine itself.

Heinrich Lohse was appointed Reichskommissar of Reichskommissariat Ostland, and HSSPF Ostland was SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Polizei Friedrich Jeckeln. With the occupation of Estonia, Army Group North established a Selbstschutz, or 'self-defence' region. With normalisation of conditions, the Selbstschutz was reorganised on territorial lines. Reval, Harrien, Jerwen, Wierland, Narwa, Dorpat, Werro, Walk, Petschur, Pernau Fellin, Ösel and Wiek were established as self-defence regions in July 1942. Selbstschutzgebietsführer, or 'Regional Self-Defence Leaders', were also appointed to

command each region, and were subordinate to the Police Prefect. All Estonia's railway territory was formed into a railway region in July 1944 and was subordinate to the Railway Prefect. With the exception of those employed in the war economy, Estonians who were physically fit and between the ages of 17 and 45 were eligible for compulsory service. An Estonian Security Police comprising five departments also existed in Reval. Estnische Sicherungsabteilungen, or 'Estonian Security Battalions', were formed at the end of 1941, being re-titled 'Schuma battalions' in 1942

Above: The work of the Einsatzgruppen went on regardless of the weather. However, by the end of 1942 shooting as a method of mass extermination in the East was giving way to the gassing of victims.

A former police captain named Petersen commanded the Latvian Auxiliary Police force, which had been raised on 3 July 1941 and numbered 240 men in six police districts by 16 July 1941. These had been either former police constables, soldiers or members of the Aizsargi, a 'self-defence' organisation founded

during the Ulmanis dictatorship in 1934. Eventually, the various auxiliary units were all amalgamated to form the Lettische Sicherungs-abteilungen, or 'Latvian Security Battalions', in November 1941, which were renamed Schuma Battalions in 1942

The German Field Commandant's office ordered that all anti-Soviet partisans in and around Kovno in Lithuania be disbanded on 28 June 1941. Five auxiliary companies were then formed from more reliable elements. The Jewish concentration camp at Kovno was guarded by one company, while another undertook police duties. In Wilna the Lithuanian political police was disbanded in July 1941, with the Ordnungsdienst (Order Service), consisting of about 150 men, being affiliated to the Einsatzgruppen. The Lithuania Security Battalion was formed at the end of 1941, probably from Order Service personnel and auxiliary police.

In 1939, a new Belorussian police force replaced the old organisation after it had been thoroughly purged. However, as the German Army approached it fled, destroying its records. The Germans formed auxiliary police from Polish and Belorussian criminal police officials, which were used by the German Security Police in Bialystok. It is also thought that a number of Belorussian auxiliary security police units existed. In Belorussia itself, the first Ukrainian Schuma Battalion was formed on 24 August 1941.

Reichskommissariat Ukraine

The second region, Reichskommissariat Ukraine, was under Reichskommissar Erich Koch, with HSSPF Russland-Süd under SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS und Polizei Erich von dem Bach-Zelewski. A Ukrainian Security Service was found to exist in Cherson by the Germans. Unreliable elements were weeded out and subsequently 157 men were ceremoniously sworn in. Tasked with guarding factories and stores against looters, saboteurs and what was euphemistically called 'the maintenance of peace', it was also responsible for rounding up Jews. Ethnic Germans were obliged to report to the unit, and about 180 had complied by 10 September 1942. Identity papers were issued and they were then employed as specialists and interpreters. To maintain order, a Ukrainian self-defence militia was also established, with the first Schuma Battalions being raised in August 1941; they reached a strength of 14,452 men by February 1942. The Ukrainian police unit *Murrawa* was attached to the 30th Waffen-Grenadier Division (Russian No 2) in July 1944 as the 23rd Security Service Battalion for a short time.

One of the reasons the Germans were able to raise sizeable units relatively quickly after their invasion of the Soviet Union was the wide-scale dissatisfaction, even hatred, felt towards the Moscow regime.

Kaminiski's kingdom

Waffen-Brigadeführer Bronislav Vladislavovich Kaminiski, for example, was born in St Petersburg, the son of a Polish father and German mother. A chemical engineer by profession, Kaminiski had no reason to love the Soviets. Under suspicion as a 'foreigner', bourgeois intellectual and potential dissident, he had spent five years in one of Stalin's labour camps, having been released only a few months before the German invasion. He was a brilliant, if autocratic, organiser who spoke German fluently and threw himself wholeheartedly behind the German cause. He tried, unsuccessfully, to form a Russian Nazi party, but apart from this one failure his record was one of unqualified success.

In January 1942 the town of Lokot fell under the jurisdiction of the 2nd Panzer Army. It stood on the edge of the Bryansk Forest, about halfway between Orec and Kursk in central Russia. It became a model of self-sufficiency under his guidance, having its own newspapers, hospitals, banks and even its own Kaminiski-devised tax system. The stipulated food supplies never failed to be delivered to the Wehrmacht on time, and the Germans found it necessary to maintain only a minimum liaison staff. The original self-defence force of

500 men was expanded into a small private army, which by September 1943 had grown into a brigade of some 10,000 men organised in five infantry regiments, supported by its own artillery of 36 field guns and armour comprising 24 captured Soviet T-34 tanks, as well as engineer, signals and medical units. This force went under the grandiose title of the 'Russian Liberation People's Army', or RONA.

The RONA fought several successful actions against the partisans of Bryansk, and even induced some of them to change sides. Kaminiski was dubbed 'the War Lord of the Bryansk Forest'. By the autumn of 1943 the Germans were in continuous retreat in Russia, and it was not long before Lokot had to be evacuated in the face of the Red Army's relentless advance. Kaminiski and his RONA, which now comprised some 15,000 men, were removed to Ratibor on the Polish-Czech border, taking with it a train of 10,500 civilians and 1500 cows.

In March 1944 the RONA was renamed a Volksheer Brigade, or 'People's Brigade'. In July it was accepted into the Waffen-SS proper as SS Assault Brigade RONA. Kaminiski was granted a commission as a Waffen-Brigadeführer. His men were not, as yet, deemed fit for frontline service, and were sent for further training to Hungary.

Deflated 'Zeppelin'

Operation 'Zeppelin', an attempt to raise large units for special operations behind the Soviet lines, was conceived in 1942. Under the command of SS-Obersturmbannführer Dr Gräfe, selected SS leaders were attached to RSHA Amt VI C, who toured prisoner-of-war camps in occupied Russian territory from March until June 194 to encourage Red Army soldiers to work against the Soviets, with promises of a modicum of freedom and better conditions. A unit of former inmates was established in April 1942 with the initial purpose of broadcasting subversive propaganda to their erstwhile comrades. By the end of the year, this project had been re-evaluated to encompass parachuting suitably trained Russian agents into Russia to act as saboteurs in the enemy rear. This led to the establishment of three units – North, Central and South – which were tasked with information-gathering and the organisation of subversion and sabotage. Sizeable numbers of recruits came forward, but due to lack of sufficient aircraft no really large-scale operations were ever undertaken. Thus the original purpose of 'Zeppelin', the deployment of large units in the Soviet rear, had been thwarted, which prompted the decision to employ the majority of the personnel recruited in anti-partisan operations.

SS Verband Druzhina

A combat unit was formed and given the title *Druzhina*, or 'Bodyguard'. The leading light was the 35-year-old ex-Soviet Lieutenant-Colonel V.V. Gil, a Kuban Cossack and former Chief of Staff of the Red Army's 229th Infantry Division. The *Druzhina*, with only eight German officers and around 1000 Russians volunteers, proved exemplary in combat against the Belorussian partisans. A second group was subsequently formed: *Druzhina* I mustered those considered unsuitable for subversive activities, and *Druzhina* II used the most intelligent and reliable elements for special operations. In March 1942, they were merged under the designation SS-Verband *Druzhina*, or 1st Russian National Brigade, with the motto 'Fight for a New Russia'. Gil adopted the *nom de guerre* 'Rodionov', and was appointed its commanding officer.

The unit stood at about battalion strength, comprising some 3000 men, and was subsequently moved to Nevel, northeast of Polotsk in Belorussia. Here, to help contain a Soviet breakthrough, it was thrown into the frontline almost immediately. HSSPF Belorussia's anti-partisan force was augmented in May 1942 by the inclusion on its strength of SS-Verband *Druzhina*. *Druzhina* was engaged against partisans and it is thought that its size had increased greatly by late 1942, consisting possibly of four battalions and a headquarters. On 18 November 1942, Gil's battalion and the Signalling Battalion formed part of the anti-

partisan strength of HSSPF Central Russia. The first defection from a unit which had apparently enjoyed the Germans' confidence occurred during the night of the 24/25 November 1942. After wounding two German workers, killing four others and one SD NCO, 63 men of the 1st company of Gil's battalion went over to the partisans at Kolitschenko. They were wearing SS uniform and carrying all their light and heavy weapons. In the spring of 1943, Gil's men were assigned a defined territory to administer as an autonomous region in the Glubokoe area.

Unreliable indigenous elements

During the summer of 1943, SS-Obergruppenführer Bach-Zelewski launched the largest anti-partisan operation to be held in Belorussia, codenamed 'Cottbus', and under Action Group West *Druzhina* units took part. During this period there was talk of incorporating *Druzhina* into General Vlassov's 'Russian Army of Liberation', and one of Vlassov's senior staff officers, Lieutenant-General Zhilenkov, was moved to Pskov where he was assigned responsibility for forming a '1st Guards Brigade' from among the Russian volunteers. Alarmed by Zhilenkov's arrival and the implied challenge to his authority, Gil determined not only to defect back to the Soviets, but if possible take the brigade with him. On 13 August, in what would appear to have been a prearranged encounter, the 'Zhelezniak Brigade', a strong partisan force, ambushed the brigade and demanded its surrender. Gil then threatened to shoot anyone unwilling to change sides. All the German liaison staff were killed. Despite this, some 30 officers and 500 other ranks refused to go over to the partisans and fought their way out of the encirclement to return to the German lines. Gil's battalion was renamed the 1st Anti-Fascist Brigade and Stalin rewarded him with the Order of the Red Star. During the German anti-partisan operation 'Spring Feast' in April 1944, Gil and the majority of his fellow deserters were killed. The small number who had shown their trustworthiness by fighting their way out of the ambush became, under

Above: The Russian Bronislav Vladislavovich Kaminiski, who raised a private army to fight on behalf of the Germans. This force fought a number of successful actions against partisans in the Bryansk Forest.

Lieutenant-General Zhilenkov's leadership, the First Guards Brigade of the POA (Russian Army of Liberation). Those other members of *Druzhina* who remained loyal to the Germans eventually ended up in the Kaukasischer Waffenverband der SS. The Reichsführer-SS was of course careful to keep the *Druzhina*

fiasco concealed from Hitler, who was merely informed the brigade had been disbanded 'because of indiscipline'.

As 1943 drew to a close, the situation in the East was deteriorating rapidly, and some of the units recruited from the indigenous population in Russia and the Ukraine were beginning to prove unreliable, so it was decided to exchange them for German units in the West. As a result, large numbers of auxiliaries were transported to France, Italy and Yugoslavia, where they fought partisans under SS, police and army command.

No precise estimates of the results of sabotage by Soviet partisans or by the groups and agents in the towns are available. Figures given by partisan commanders were often exaggerated or repeated in reports of several commanders. It was on the basis of such data that Ponomarenko, Chief of the Partisan Movement Central Staff, claimed that during the first two years of the Soviet-German war the partisans of Belorussia alone had killed over 300,000 Germans, caused over 3000 railway accidents and destroyed 3263 bridges, 1191 tanks, 4097 lorries and 895 stores of various kinds. Though

Above: Following partisan attacks, the Germans would invariably instigate retaliatory action. This included the killing of civilians from villages suspected of giving aid to partisans, as above.

these figures are exaggerated, the fact remains that the partisans did have an effect on the German prosecution of the war.

The killings in the East by the SS were so monumental that to look at global figures tends to dehumanise the indescribable horrors perpetrated. By looking at one individual's record it is hoped that the extermination of six million souls is brought into focus. SS-Oberführer Christian Wirth, a former Stuttgart police officer, had been loaned to Operation 'Euthanasia' by SS-Gruppenführer Nebe. Wirth was immediately sent to Poland, under Odilo Globocnik, with the brief to find an efficient method of despatching one million Polish Jews. He selected an area along the Lublin-Lwow railway for his first experimental camp; he went on to head an organisation of a group of four extermination camps.

The inhumanity of Christian Wirth

Wirth decided he wanted nothing to do with gas vans or mobile death units, so instead, a permanent unit of three 'shower rooms' was constructed at the centre of the camp. To further camouflage them, he planted geraniums and kept the surrounding grass cut. The victims were pacified by the thought of a shower, but inside they received the exhaust gas from diesel engines. He had wide doors on both front and back walls to make the removal of gassed victims easier. He was so pleased with the killing centre that he added three more to allow the camp to deal with 1500 Jews daily. A sign was hung over the gate that read, 'Entrance to the Jewish State'. Above the large doors through which the Jews entered the gas chamber was a banner made from a synagogue curtain which stated in Hebrew: 'This is the gate of the Lord into which the righteous shall enter.' Wirth was an egotist without conscience, exemplified by an eyewitness account of when he struck a woman across the face with five lashes of a whip to encourage her into the chamber. The engines failed to work and the victims were crammed in for two hours and 49 minutes before they started. A further 35 minutes passed before all were dead. Then, the workers prised open the victims mouths with iron bars for gold teeth, and searched private parts for hidden valuables. Wirth was dubbed 'the death camp king', but this title aroused the jealousy of others determined to topple him, in particular Höss, who eventually succeeded him. Such was the nature of SS rule in the East.

RED STORM IN THE SOUTH

The second half of 1943 was a time of crises for German forces in the East, which were often only saved from turning into catastrophes by the intervention of Waffen-SS units. By mid-August, for example, a 55km- (34-mile-) wide gap had opened up in the German lines west of Kursk, and Red Army units began to pour through it, threatening Kharkov once again. The *Das Reich* and *Totenkopf* Divisions, together with the *Wiking* Division, were all thrown into battle to prevent the loss of the city, though they were already weakened by the Kursk disaster. *Das Reich* had received all of the *Leibstandarte*'s armour before the latter's transfer to Italy, making it a formidable fighting force. In a reversal of the German capture of Kharkov in March, it was now the Red Army's turn to launch a massive pincer attack, with the 53rd Army driving in from the north and the 57th Army from the south. The 5th Guards Tank Army was to apply the hammer blow. The Russian attack was not quite as effective as the German one, though. The Soviets ran into strong defences, and on just one day of fighting Waffen-SS anti-tank gunners knocked out over 180 Russian tanks. It

Left: A Waffen-SS machine-gun team awaits the next Russian attack during the fighting around Kharkov in August 1943. The SS was instrumental in saving Army Group South.

must be stated that Russian tactics still erred towards the unsophisticated. However, such was the strength of the Red Army that it could only be delayed. Manstein feared encirclement, and as Kempf's position became untenable in the city, he was forced to abandon Kharkov on 22 August 1943.

Over the next few weeks the *Das Reich*, *Totenkopf* and *Wiking* Divisions achieved some outstanding successes in small-scale actions with armoured units of the Red Army. On 12 September, for example, *Das Reich* destroyed 78 enemy tanks in one engagement alone. However, the Russians seemed to have little problem in replacing such losses, whereas the hard-pressed Waffen-SS units found it increasingly difficult to maintain their own strength.

Holding the Dnieper

Hitler agreed that Manstein's Army Group South could withdraw to the line of Melitopol and the River Dnieper, thus keeping the strategically important western Ukraine in German hands. The withdrawal, undertaken in the face of Soviet pressure, was completed by 30 September 1943. By that time a total of 68 German divisions – 1,250,000 men and over 2000 tanks of Army Group South – were tasked with holding the river line at all costs. Opposing them, however, the Red Army fielded a mighty force almost twice as strong and much better equipped.

In late August, Soviet forces began to advance, and the Waffen-SS took part in a spirited withdrawal towards the River Dnieper. Yelnya fell to the Red Army after two days of bitter fighting, but the Russians were made to fight for every metre of ground and had to pause within a week to regroup. Then the offensive continued, the Russians capturing Bryansk, Smolensk and Roslavl in quick succession. By 2 October the Germans had been driven 240km (149 miles) westwards.

A Dutch volunteer, SS-Standartenoberjunker Jan Munk, SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment *Westland*, 5th SS Panzer Division *Wiking*, provides an account of the fighting at this time:

'Our positions were still in the Dnieper area, but were rather exposed. There were lots of bushes and undergrowth, with a sprinkling of trees. The Russians tried several attacks in what was, for them, very favourable terrain, but we managed to stop them every time. During their night attacks, for example, it was almost impossible for them to move without making a noise, so we had no problems in that respect.

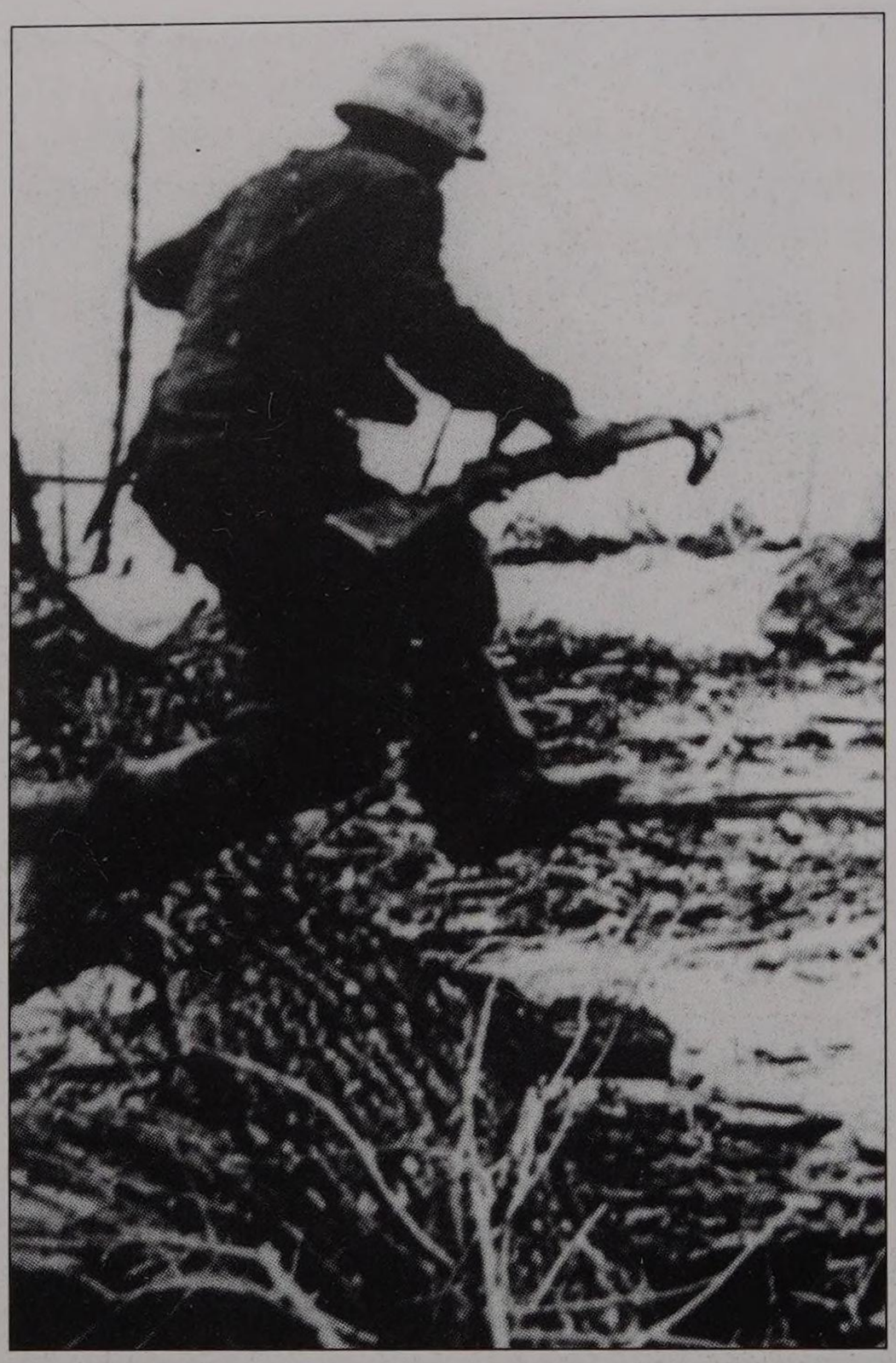
'On 2nd November 1943, we knew something was up because we heard the enemy singing and making a lot of noise. In other words, they had had their ration of vodka to boost their courage prior to an attack. Sure enough, at about 1800 hours we received information that an attack was imminent. At that time I commanded a squad, and I sent them all out of the bunker we were in to take their places in the trenches. They all went except for one, a Romanian, who told me that someone had taken his steel helmet, and the one left behind was too small for him. He wanted to stay behind and guard the bunker. I told him what I thought of that, and gave him my own helmet. It fitted. I went out wearing my camouflaged field cap. Then I joined my number two on the machine gun.

'He was bleeding like a stuck pig'

'The attack came, a bit fiercer than usual, but we managed to beat it off again. As always, that was the time when our own artillery started shelling, in front of the retreating enemy, catching them in between our shells and machine-gun fire. This time the barrage was very close by. I heard one gun in particular whose rounds landed short and to our left, then the next one was to our left but nearer still.

'The one following was a bull's-eye. It landed right in front of us and destroyed our machine gun. We had been a split-second too late in taking cover. It felt as if an enormous

Right: In the Soviet Union, especially near marshlands, mosquitoes were a perennial problem for the armies of both sides. These Waffen-SS motorcyclists have found a practical answer to the airborne threat.



Left: A German soldier dashes for cover during the retreat to the Dnieper in the autumn of 1943. Despite the efforts of the* Das Reich *and* Wiking *Divisions, Army Group South was in trouble as the year closed.

weight had pushed me violently down. My number two started to splutter that the bastards had blown his nose off. It wasn't quite that bad, though. A tiny splinter had pierced his nose from one side right through to the other, and he was bleeding like a stuck pig. We decided to go back to the bunker so that I could bandage him properly.

'To my surprise I found that I couldn't move. I thought I had merely cut off the blood supply to my legs by squatting on my haunches. When the next shell came I was pushed, or so I thought, through the trench so fast that I could not keep upright, and I scraped my face on the ground. I shouted to my comrade not to be so bloody stupid and to calm down. He helped me to the bunker. Once inside, however, he told me that he hadn't touched me, let alone pushed me. It dawned on me that something wasn't quite right. My legs were still useless, so I undid my belt and the lower buttons of my tunic and tried to feel along my back, finding nothing, I loosened my trousers and inspected that area. Still nothing. I dressed again and went back to bandaging my friend. We both had a smoke and then I began to feel hot and sweaty. I took my cap off and blood poured down over my face. With my fingers I could feel where the blood was coming from, a small cut right on the top of my head. Now I knew why my legs wouldn't work.

'After a while I was carried through the trenches to an area where it was wide enough to use a stretcher. I was then brought to a collection point to wait for proper transport. Quite a few of our men were there, some on stretchers, some badly injured and others not quite so bad.

'I fired a shot over his head'

'Then the Russians attacked again, and all the wounded who could walk were told to man their positions again. Those of us remaining were left behind to fend for ourselves as best we could. We were given some grenades and machine pistols and wished 'good luck'. We fully understood. More than a dozen men would have been needed to carry us away, and they couldn't be spared.

'The Russians appeared and shot at us – we shot back. They threw hand grenades and we replied. Fortunately, the Wehrmacht counter-attacked with the support of some light tanks. We did not lose a single wounded man, although some of us, including me, collected a few more wounds, though nothing serious. I was then taken by stretcher again to a Wehrmacht bunker. It was deep, with a well protected entrance and a very thick roof. Inside were tables and easy chairs. A radio was playing, and it looked almost like something from a propaganda picture. A doctor examined me and said: 'When did you last have a piss?' As

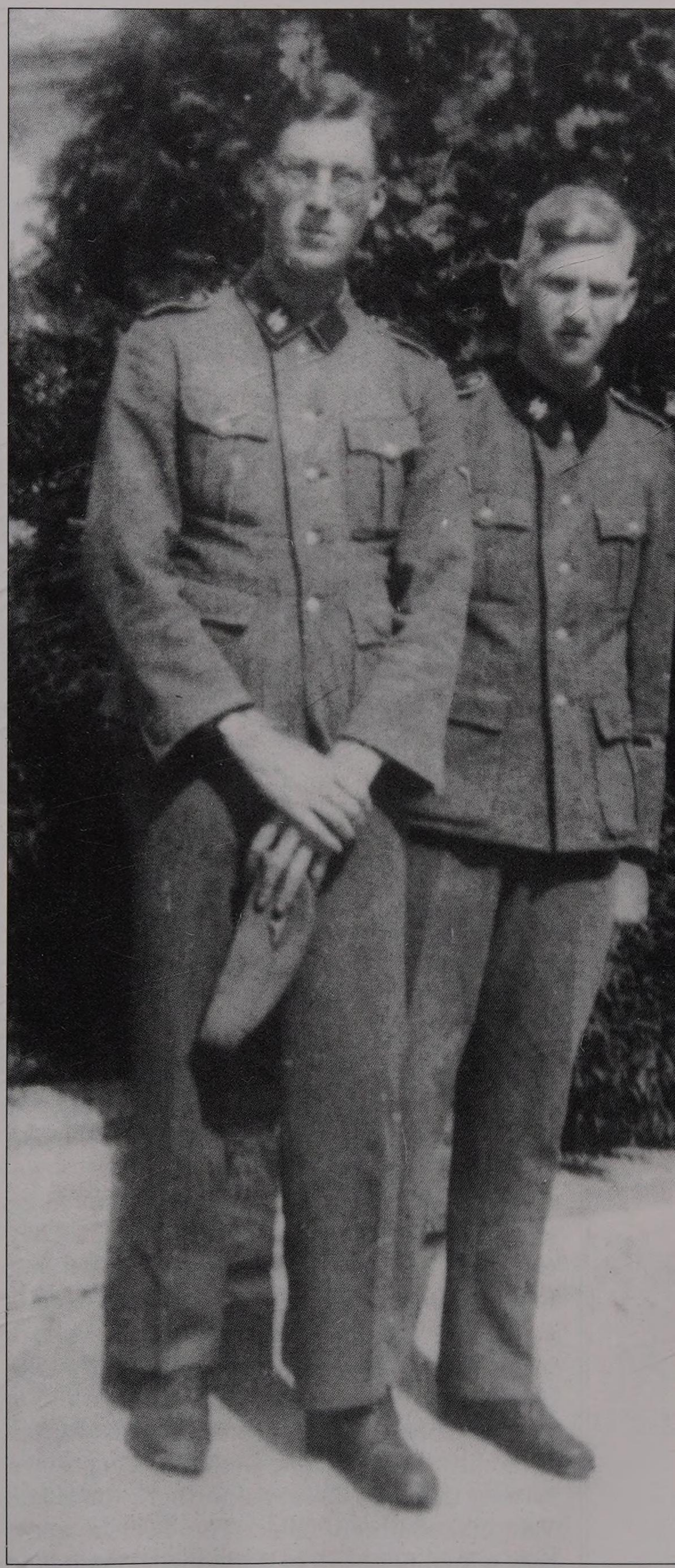
far as I could remember that was noon the previous day, a good 17 hours before. Before I knew what was happening, I had a catheter inserted. I didn't feel a thing, though the doctor was pleased that he had done it in time.

'During and after the German counterattack, several Russian prisoners were taken. These were used, as usual, for carrying ammunition and, on this occasion, to carry the stretchers. To go back to the dressing station we had to cross a rather bare, flat field. The Russians were directing some artillery fire on this area and every time a shell landed the Russian carrying the foot of the stretcher I was on would just drop it and take cover. The one at the head end was more careful and lowered me gently. By this time I had a splitting headache and all the dropping wasn't helping. I told the one at the feet that if he dropped me again I would shoot him. I had to warn him twice more. After each warning he would initially lower his end, but soon went back to just dropping me. Eventually I got my pistol out and fired a shot over his head. Everything went fine after that!'

Hollow victories

In November 1943, the *Leibstandarte* Division was released from duty in Italy and was sent back to the Eastern Front. It was allocated to XLVIII Panzer Corps of the 4th Panzer Army, deployed to the south of Kiev in the Ukraine. Despite the sterling efforts of the *Das Reich* Division, which was operating near Kiev, the city fell to the Russians on 7 November. The *Leibstandarte* Division did have some localised successes against Red Army units in the Kiev sector, but again these represented only delaying actions.

Between mid-November and the end of the year, both the *Leibstandarte* and *Das Reich* Divisions attempted to encircle a number of Red Army units. This was achieved, but the



Right: SS-Standartenoberjunker Jan Munk of the Panzergrenadier Regiment* Westland, Wiking *Division (left), whose account of the fighting around the River Dnieper is recounted in this chapter.

German units were spread so thinly that they could not maintain their positions, and soon the Germans were themselves fighting desperately to avoid encirclement. At Brusilov, XXIV Panzer Corps, to which the *Das Reich* Division had been allocated, was simply overwhelmed in bitter hand-to-hand fighting by massive Russian forces. The remnants of the division, together with the *Leibstandarte*, retreated towards Zhitomir. The *Leibstandarte* Division was then deployed to Berdichev, where it linked up with the 1st Panzer Division and succeeded in halting the Red Army advance in that sector, albeit only for a short time.

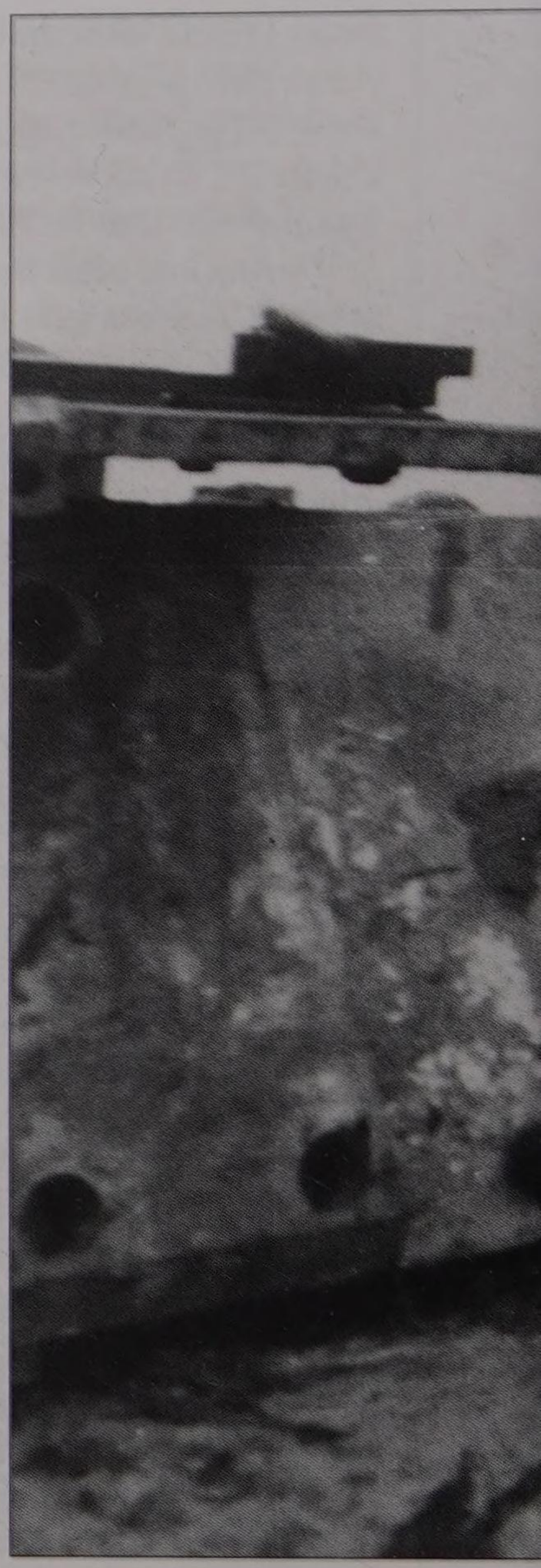
The remaining division of II SS Panzer Corps, the *Totenkopf* Division, had assumed the role of a 'fire brigade', continually rushing from one threatened sector to another. In November and early December 1943, for example, it served with Hube's 1st Panzer Army, which was attempting to hold Krivoi Rog and the defensive positions on the River Dnieper. On 12 December, together with the 11th and 13th Panzer Divisions, it halted the Soviet advance in that sector.

The Cherkassy Pocket

On 24 December 1943, the Russian forces in the southern sector of the front continued their push westwards from their positions around Kiev. Zhitomir was quickly recaptured, and only a determined effort by Manstein's forces slowed the enemy advance, though not before some German units had already been pushed back by as much as 160km (100 miles), being badly mauled in the process.

At this juncture the Soviets attempted to smash German forces around Kirovgrad. They captured the town on 8 January 1944, but found German resistance stronger than expected. Some 11 German divisions were involved, including the *Wiking* Division and the SS-Sturmbrigade *Wallonien*, the Belgian Walloon volunteer unit recently transferred to Waffen-SS control. These strong German units posed a serious threat to Koniev's northern flank and Vatutin's southern flank. The Soviets knew they would have to eradicate the German-held salient to ensure the success of their attack. Koniev renewed his attack on 25 January, and by 29 January 60,000 German troops had been encircled near Cherkassy. A sudden thaw turned the terrain into a boggy morass, making movement all but impossible. The airfield within the pocket, which the Luftwaffe was using to re-supply the isolated divisions, suddenly became unusable. Constant pressure from the Russians saw the salient shrink rapidly, until it measured only 65 square kilometres (40 square miles) by 9 February.

As on earlier occasions, Hitler refused to entertain any talk of a breakout by the encir-



Right: A Panzer IV of the* Leibstandarte *Division in the Kamenets-Podolsk Pocket in March 1944. By April 1944 the Red Army offensives in southern Russia had destroyed the entire southern wing of the German armies on the Eastern Front. The only good news as far as the Waffen-SS was concerned was the appearance of two new panzer divisions in Russia: the 9th SS Panzer Division* Hohenstaufen *and 10th SS Panzer Division* Frundsberg. *Both of them would become élite fighting formations, though it would take a lot more than two divisions to reverse German misfortunes in southern Russia and prevent defeat.

cled units, insisting the only viable option was an offensive by Manstein's forces to relieve them. The Red Army, however, had thrown a ring of 35 divisions around the salient and any escape attempt by the trapped forces looked unlikely to succeed. Fortunately, Hitler was persuaded to allow the encircled units to attempt a breakout. The only armoured unit in the pocket, the *Wiking* Division, commanded by SS-Obergruppenführer Herbert Otto Gille, would cover the flanks, while SS-Sturmbrigade *Wallonien* formed the rearguard.

On the night of 16 February the breakout began. Movement over the waterlogged terrain was difficult, and once the Russians became aware of what was happening a heavy barrage of artillery and rocket fire was laid down on the fleeing Germans. The wounded had to be left behind, as did most of the artillery and other heavy equipment. SS-Sturmbrigade *Wallonien* suffered dreadful losses covering the rearguard, with a staggering 70 per cent of its strength left dead on the battlefield. The Walloons' effort to fight their way out lasted for several days and was enormously costly. On 14 February, over 200 members of the Walloon assault brigade were killed, including its commander Lucien Lipert. Léon Degrelle, who had

Above:* Wiking *Division soldiers engage Russian forces at night in the southern sector of the Eastern Front in early 1944. The division was badly mauled at Cherkassy and had to be withdrawn for refitting.

spent most of the war on the Russian Front with a legion of Walloon volunteers, was promoted to replace him. When the Germans finally broke out, and as the remnants of the brigade drew near to the German lines, they were in danger of being overtaken by pursuing Red Army units. The *Wiking* Division was down to 4000 men, and of the original 2000 Walloons only 632 came through unscathed. The survivors were sent to Wildflecken in Franconia to regroup, but in fact received little respite. A desperate situation had developed in Estonia, and the Walloon assault brigade had to be rushed there to take part alongside its Flemish compatriots in the Battle of the European SS at Narva in July 1944.

The *Wiking* Division's few remaining panzers turned back and held off the enemy for just long enough to allow the last of the brigade to reach the German lines, before being overrun. Some 32,000 Germans escaped with their lives from the Cherkassy Pocket. Despite the fact that a great deal of equipment had been left behind, a major disaster had been averted. If the pocket had been totally destroyed, Manstein's Army Group South would have been dealt a fatal blow. But once again the Waffen-SS had saved the day.

For the superb performance of their troops, both Gille and SS-Hauptsturmführer Léon Degrelle, commander of SS-Sturmbrigade *Wallonien*, were taken to Hitler's headquarters in Prussia and decorated. Gille received the Oakleaves and Swords, and Degrelle the Knight's Cross. He subsequently was to have the Oakleaves conferred upon him by Hitler personally, becoming the 355th recipient. Hitler held Degrelle in such high esteem that he said to him: 'If I had a son, I would wish him to be like you.'

The *Das Reich* Division, now totally exhausted, was withdrawn from Russia and sent to France for rest and refitting in February 1944. A battle group from the division, under the command of SS-Oberführer Heinz Lammerding, remained on the Eastern Front.

During March 1944, Army Group South was forced to make a slow withdrawal to the River Dniester, on the border with Romania. On 11 March 1944, elements of the *Totenkopf* Division were airlifted to Balta to form the core of a new defence line. Events were moving too fast, however, and both the 6th and 8th Armies were too weak to prevent the Red Army from crossing the Dniester on a wide front before the new defences were ready, the Russians pushing deep into Romanian territory. The *Totenkopf* Division, attached to XLVIII Panzer Corps, battled its way west to avoid encirclement. The exhausted Waffen-SS men fought off the Soviet spearheads for three weeks, as the withdrawal continued through Balta and Romania across the River Sireth and into the Carpathian Mountains.

The Russian offensive eventually ran out of steam, and May was relatively peaceful. On 9 June the division was pulled out of the line for rest and refitting, receiving badly needed tanks and other armoured vehicles, as well as around 6000 replacement troops. Some of these men were the *Totenkopf* Division's veterans returning to duty after recovering from wounds, but 75 per cent were raw recruits hastily transferred from the newly formed 16th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Reichsführer-SS*.

The Kamenets-Podolsk Pocket

In March 1944, as Army Group South struggled to reorganise its left flank, it was hit by a new Russian offensive which shattered it completely, tearing a massive gap between the 1st and 4th Panzer Armies at Proskurov. Before the breach could be sealed, the entire 1st Panzer Army was surrounded in the Kamenets-Podolsk Pocket. Among the units trapped were the *Leibstandarte* Division and SS-Oberführer Heinz Lammerding's battle group.

At this point Hitler agreed to allow the reconstituted II SS Panzer Corps, containing 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* and 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg*, to be rushed to the Eastern Front. Though untried in battle, these two divisions were of the highest standard. Manned primarily by ethnic Germans, they were equipped and trained to a high level. Also of significance was the fact that the units were built around cadre personnel from tried and tested units, such as *Das Reich* and the *Leibstandarte* Divisions, and had been fortunate enough to be allowed 12 months of training. Both units were to display combat performances equal to that of the best Waffen-SS divisions. The 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* was led by SS-Brigadeführer Willi Bittrich, and the 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg* by SS-Brigadeführer Karl von Treuenfeld.

The Red Army mauled

As much fuel and ammunition as possible was lifted into the Kamenets-Podolsk Pocket in order to avoid Manstein's forces having to abandon much of their heavy equipment and armour when the time came to break out. Under cover of blizzard conditions, the withdrawal began on 27 March 1944. The 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* and 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg* were part of the 4th Panzer Army's counterattack launched to take the pressure off the retreating 1st Panzer Army as it fought its way west. The two forces made contact on 7 April, and over the next nine days the bulk of Manstein's forces made it back safely into German-held territory. Unlike the breakout from Cherkassy, this escape was achieved without serious losses. The Soviets, however, lost several hundred armoured vehicles as the Germans headed west.

In April 1944, the *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler* was withdrawn from Russia and moved to France for refitting, while SS-Oberführer Heinz Lammerding's battle group rejoined the *Das Reich* Division in France. The 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* and 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg* were withdrawn to Poland, but when the D-Day landings took place in June they were both rushed to France. The *Wiking* Division was badly mauled in the escape from the Cherkassy Pocket, and was withdrawn from the front for rest and refitting. But now the Führer faced his worst nightmare: a war on two fronts. And in Russia the Red Army drew breath before its next offensive.

FIELDS OF GLORY

In northern Russia, 1944 began badly for the Wehrmacht. Having lifted the siege of Leningrad, the Red Army had gone on to the offensive and gradually drove the Germans westwards towards Estonia and Latvia. It was in this sector of the front that most of the west and east European SS volunteer units were concentrated. The main Waffen-SS force in this area was III (Germanisches) SS Panzer Corps, commanded by SS-Gruppenführer Felix Steiner, containing the 11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland* and SS Freiwilligen-Brigade *Nederland*. In these two units alone were volunteers from Norway, Denmark, Holland, France, Finland, Sweden and Switzerland. Allocated to the same sector of the front were the 15th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (No 1) and 19th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (No 2) from Latvia, 20th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (Estnische No 1) from Estonia, the Flemish *Langemarck* Brigade and SS-Sturmbrigade *Wallonien*.

Typical of the foreign volunteers in the Waffen-SS at this time was anti-tank gunner SS-Unterscharführer der Reserve (Flemish Volunteer) Remy Schrynen, *Langemarck* Brigade. He demonstrated his fortitude in many taxing situations. On 2 January 1944, for example, he destroyed three Russian T-34 tanks; on 3 March he was wounded for the seventh time. On the fourth day of the Russian offensive his gun

Left: The strain of battle clearly shows on the faces of these members of III SS Panzer Corps attempting to hold the line at Narva against the Red Army in March 1944.

crew was neutralised, either killed or wounded, and the support grenadiers retreated. Schrynen, now alone, received orders to withdraw. He decided to stay at his post, loading, aiming and firing at the advancing tanks alone. As a dying naval radio operator directed artillery fire onto Schrynen's own position, the enemy infantry attacked. Behind the infantry came 30 tanks, five being the new Josef Stalin types. In a dramatic firefight, he destroyed three Stalins and four T-34s, putting others out of action, until a Stalin blew up his gun no more than 30m (98ft) away, severely wounding him and catapulting him away. During a counterattack, he was discovered surrounded by the shot-up and glowing parts of a dozen Soviet tanks. For his bravery he was awarded the Knight's Cross on 21 September 1944.

Narva – the line in the sand

By the end of January 1944, the Red Army had reached the strong German defence lines at Narva. These ran from the city of Narva itself, south along the banks of the River Narva, to the shores of Lake Peipus and down to Polotsk, northwest of Vitebsk. A concentrated effort by the Russians along the entire line was expected. It came on 2 February, but any hopes that the German defences would easily crumble were soon dashed. Narva, the gateway to Estonia, was too important to yield without a mighty struggle. Defensive positions had therefore been established along the west bank of the River Narva, and for the next few months Steiner's men and other SS units stood firm against overwhelming odds. So prominent were the foreign volunteer units of the Waffen-SS in this sector that the defence of Narva was to become known as the 'Battle of the European SS'.

The Germans had established a large and strongly defended bridgehead covering a substantial area of territory on the eastern approaches to Narva, directly opposite the city itself. At this location soldiers from the 11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland* and Brigade *Nederland* dug in and awaited the Russian assault. The Red Army had assembled a formidable force for the attack on Narva: the 8th and 47th Armies and the 2nd Shock Army.

At the beginning of February, the Red Army began its attempts to soften up the German defences with heavy shelling. Some Russian units forced a crossing of the river between Hungerburg and Narva and established a small bridgehead. The Waffen-SS soldiers, however, were able to throw the enemy back with some ease, and on 3 February Panzer Abteilung 11 *Hermann von Salza*, part of the 11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland*, defeated another attempt by the Russians to establish a bridgehead. Eventually, though, the enemy did succeed in establishing a small bridgehead at Ssivertski, to the northwest of the city. A subsequent attempt to break out of the bridgehead into the German rear areas was quickly stopped by an SS battle group. This Russian pocket was finally destroyed in a concerted assault by elements from both *Nordland* and *Nederland*.

Blunting the Red Army's attacks

The Soviets forced yet another bridgehead on the west bank at Vopsküla, which was supported by heavy artillery. However, it too was destroyed by the 19th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (No 2) after savage hand-to-hand fighting. It was in this action that Estonian volunteer Waffen-Unterscharführer Haralt Nugiseks was decorated for extreme gallantry. His heroism was typical of many SS soldiers who fought at Narva. He had exposed himself to enemy fire on three occasions to urge on his assault troop, on each occasion being hit by enemy fire, yet he continued to lead his men in close-quarter fighting, driving the enemy out of their positions. He was awarded the Knight's Cross on 2 May 1945. Five days later he was captured, and subsequently served a long sentence of captivity in a Siberian prison camp.

Frustrated by their lack of success, the Soviets decided to attempt an amphibious assault on the coast to the west of Narva, bypassing the defenders and striking deep into

Right: Remy Schrynen, a Flemish volunteer in the Waffen-SS who won the Knight's Cross for outstanding bravery in Russia in January 1944. An anti-tank gunner in the* Langemarck *Brigade, he single-handedly knocked out seven Russian tanks in one action before being wounded. Schrynen was an exceptional example of the calibre of the western European recruits fighting in the Waffen-SS in the northern sector of the Eastern Front in early 1944. The defence of Narva was called the 'Battle of the European SS', and the fact that the Red Army was stalled at Narva for six months is testimony to the fighting qualities of the Danish, Norwegian, Dutch, French, Finnish, Swedish and Swiss SS recruits.

the German rear. This, it was hoped, would lure German units away from the front, thereby weakening the line and creating a chance for a Russian breakthrough.

The seaborne assault force was ferried in a motley collection of fishing boats and steamers, but did manage to land undetected and overrun the defenders in the immediate area of the beach near Merekula. The defenders were soon alerted, however, and though the Russian force managed to push forwards into the town, that was as far as it got. German reinforcements were called up in the shape of Waffen-SS grenadiers and Stuka ground-attack aircraft,

Above: Waffen-SS troops prior to moving up to the front at Narva. The Russian offensive at the start of 1944 had threatened Army Group North with a total rout. Fortunately, Steiner's III SS Panzer Corps helped prevent this.

and the invasion force was swiftly crushed, with the Russians suffering heavy losses.

To the south near Krivasso, the Red Army established a strong bridgehead from which to launch its attack into German-held territory. By 24 February, the Soviets looked as though they would break out and sweep up the rear of III (Germanisches) SS Panzer Corps. Troops from the 11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland* were quickly moved to the scene and initially made good progress in their counterattack, before becoming bogged down. The Soviets counterattacked, and the fighting quickly degenerated into ferocious hand-to-hand combat with knives, bayonets and entrenching tools. Only the arrival of some army Tiger tanks enabled the Waffen-SS troops to withdraw safely. Fierce fighting continued throughout March and April, with the Soviets making little headway against the tenacious German defenders.

When the Waffen-SS troops recaptured Sirgula in March, they discovered the corpses of Estonian civilians who had been used as forced labour to carry ammunition for the Red Army. The Russians had killed the civilians before fleeing. Several Danish SS volunteers had also been captured and shot by the Russians at Hrastovica.

In early March, Soviet artillery and aerial bombardment of the Narva area increased dramatically. On 7 March, for example, massed Russian air attacks went on for 12 hours, and were followed by a massive artillery barrage. The civilian population of Narva had been evacuated, but the Waffen-SS defenders simply dug deeper into the rubble of the city. The main Russian attack following the softening-up was against the area held by the Dutch volunteer *General Seyffardt* Regiment. The Dutch sol-

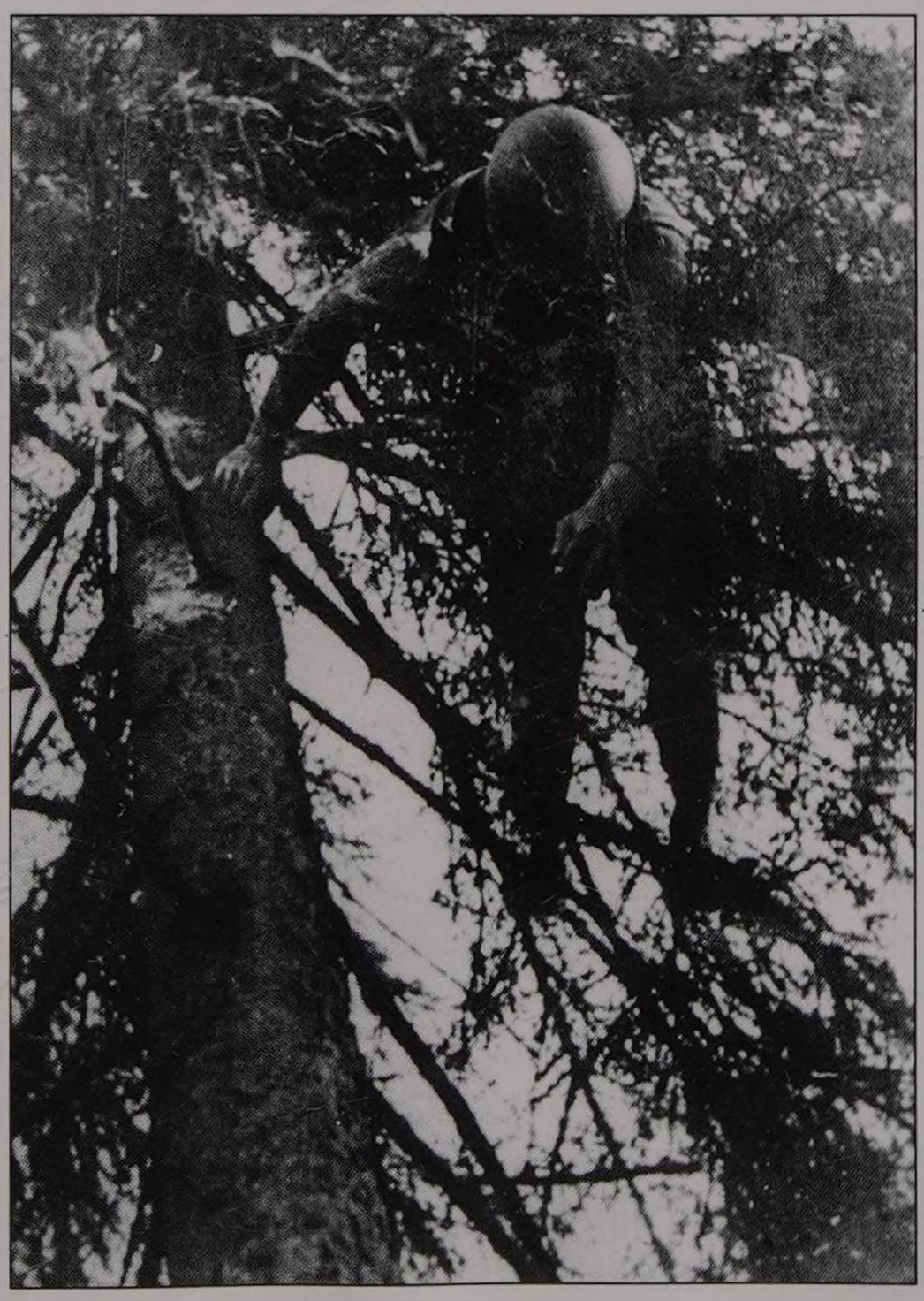
diers repulsed every Soviet attack and even launched their own counterattack. Their commander, SS-Obersturmbannführer Wolfgang Joerchel, was decorated with the Knight's Cross on 21 April 1944 in recognition of the achievements of his command.

SS-Hauptsturmführer Fruhauf

The main axis of the Russian attack then moved against the positions at Lilienbach, held by another Dutch volunteer regiment, SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment *De Ruyter*. SS-Hauptsturmführer Carl-Heinz Fruhauf served as battalion commander of the 23rd Pioneer Battalion, SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment *Nederland*, from January throughout March 1944. On 13 March, he was re-assigned as battalion commander of SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment *De Ruyter*. During March Fruhauf's battalion was engaged in heavy fighting at Narwa, and it was during this battle that he received the Knight's Cross. While fighting in the Narva bridgehead, the 5th Company's position was overrun by assault after a heavy artillery bombardment. Because the battalion reserve had been committed, the situation was desperate. Fruhauf immediately gathered every non-essential soldier. He then led a counterattack and successfully threw back the enemy after intense hand- to-hand fighting. The success of the counterattack retained key terrain and restored the former frontline. After this bitter fighting, the enemy were driven back by reinforcements from the 11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland*'s *Danmark* and *Norge* Regiments. On 27 July 1944, Fruhauf was severely wounded by a high-explosive tank shell and spent four months recovering in the field hospital in Zappot, East Prussia.

Despite the spirited and often successful defensive actions by the Dutch SS troops at Lilienbach, it became clear that this part of the bridgehead on the east bank of the Narva could not be held much longer. Waffen-SS losses in manpower and equipment had been too high, and while Soviet strength was increasing, the Waffen-SS units were being bled dry. Nevertheless, by June 1944 the Red Army had still not taken Narva, though the German bridgehead on the east bank opposite the city had been drastically reduced. The Germans, aware of the battering on the central and southern sectors of the front in Russia, realised that their position at Narva was becoming more precarious as each day passed, and thus decided to withdraw to a new defensive position farther west, to the Tannenberg Line.

On 24 July 1944, the northern end of a massive pincer attack forced the 20th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (Estnische No 1) back over the River Narva. The Estonian volunteers were forced to retreat, fighting every metre of the way in defence of their homeland. Having experienced Soviet occupation once



Right: One of the thousands of Russian soldiers who gave their lives during the fighting in and around Narva. The intensity of the battles at Narva frequently resulted in units on both sides being annihilated.

before, they had no wish to repeat it, and they fought tenaciously. On 24 July, the Waffen-SS units still on the east bank of the Narva slipped quickly over the river and into the city, destroying the bridges as they did so. By the close of the next day, the city itself had been evacuated. However, during the retreat to the Tannenberg positions the Dutch unit *General Seyffardt* was cut off and annihilated by the Soviets.

On 26 July the Russian attack against Tannenberg began. The Russians mounted a series of sledgehammer blows against the greatly outnumbered Germans and their European allies. The fighting see-sawed back and forth, neither side able to establish a lasting superiority. Despite its many successes, the Waffen-SS suffered great losses, while the enemy poured ever-increasing numbers of fresh troops over the Narva and into the battle. The Waffen-SS formations had lost virtually all their armour, and their artillery was the only remaining heavy weaponry. The Russian attacks slackened somewhat in August, as the Red Army gathered its strength for one final all-out assault on the beleaguered Waffen-SS. The punch-drunk European volunteers could only await the impending blow.

The Soviet sledgehammer

By this time the European volunteers knew that the Soviet offensive was tearing holes in the front. On 22 June, for example, the Red Army had launched its summer offensive across the entire Eastern Front. Codenamed 'Bagration', it was deliberately timed to start on the third anniversary of the German invasion of Russia. The Red Army had built up a massive force of some six million men, compared to the Wehrmacht's two million. Army Group Centre, which was destined to take the main brunt of the offensive, could field only 750,000 men, under 1000 tanks and 10,000

Right: SS-Brigadeführer Jürgen Wagner of the SS Freiwilligen Brigade* Nederland *(left) chats to men of his command who have just been decorated for gallantry after intensive actions against the Red Army at Narva.

artillery pieces. Opposing it, however, were over two million Red Army soldiers, 4000 tanks and nearly 29,000 field guns.

Both qualitatively and quantitatively the Red Army was better. Its conscripts were no longer the half-trained, poorly equipped peasants the Germans had faced during the Blitzkrieg in the summer of 1941. By 1944, the Red Army's front-line combat units were composed in the main of experienced veterans who had good hardware. The latest T-34 tank, with its uprated 85mm main gun, and the new Josef Stalin heavy tank armed with a 122mm gun, were a match for most German tanks. In air power, too, the Soviet Air Force was technically equal to the Luftwaffe, having excellent fighters and ground-attack aircraft plus overall superiority in numbers in all theatres.

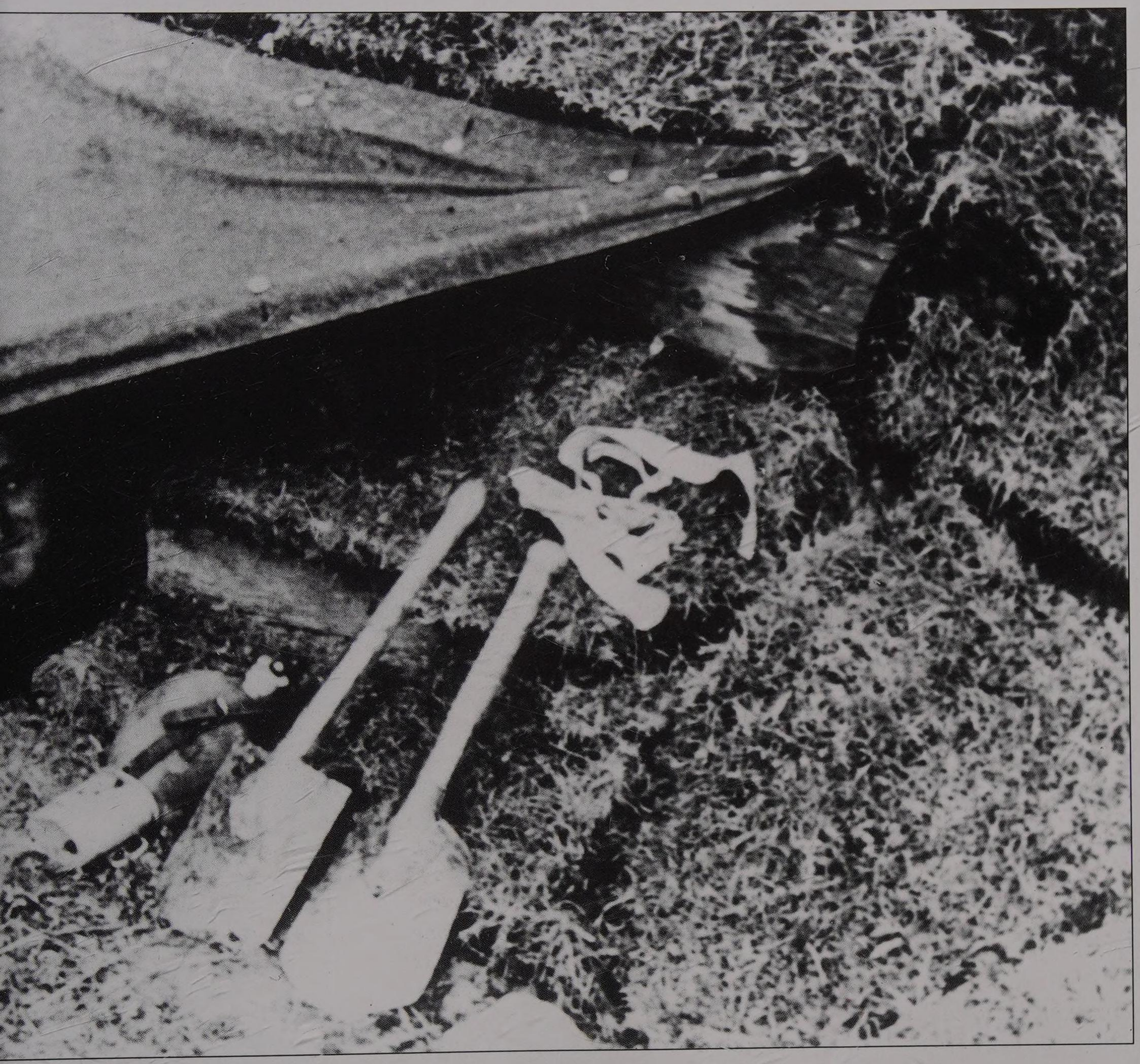
The élite Waffen-SS

Although 1943 and the first half of 1944 had been a period of disasters for the armies of the Third Reich on the Eastern Front, Hitler had reason to be greatly pleased with the performance of his élite Waffen-SS divisions. Over and over again SS units had stood firm against almost impossible odds, while Wehrmacht troops retreated. Even the most die-hard Waffen-SS troops must have realised that military success on the Eastern Front was now impossible, but they continued to make sacrifice after sacrifice often holding the line to allow other units to escape.

Few other units in the Wehrmacht could engender such confidence from the Führer as his precious Waffen-SS. Though proud of their achievements and their deserved élite status, the Waffen-SS found Hitler's confidence to be a mixed blessing. With alarming regularity Waffen-SS divisions were rushed to threatened areas of the front and expected to save the day. That they did so is testament to the fact that they were élite troops. However, they were not invincible, and there would come a time when not even the Waffen-SS could stave off defeat.

Although at this point in the war the Waffen-SS represented only around five per cent of the fighting strength of the Wehrmacht, it is significant that some 20 per cent of the Waffen-SS units were panzer divisions of the highest standard. In fact, just over 25 per cent of all Panzer divisions were Waffen-SS, and around 30 per cent of all panzergrenadier divisions. But apart from the 12 Waffen-SS divisions that could truly be called élite, the remainder, often formed late in the war, were of indifferent quality, of divisional strength in name only, and were sometimes poorly equipped. In view of these figures, the military significance of the

Right: Awaiting the next Russian bombardment or aerial attack. Air and artillery attacks were a favoured Russian tactic at Narva. On 7 March 1944, for example, the city endured 12 hours of aerial bombing, followed by a savage artillery barrage. Though the Waffen-SS defenders inhabited bunkers, a great deal of damage was done to the defenders' vehicles, guns and equipment. Worse than the heavy bombardments were the weeks of continuous Russian shelling, which took a steady toll of lives. The Russian attacks grew in intensity, and in July 1944 the Red Army hurled some 20 divisions against Narva. III SS Panzer Corps was forced to retreat west to save itself.



achievements of the Waffen-SS on the Eastern Front is indisputable.

Despite the efforts of the Waffen-SS in the summer of 1944, the Red Army had only been delayed, not halted. The amount of men and equipment the Russians could put into the field by the middle of 1944 was truly staggering. For the liberation of Belorussia alone, for example, the Red Army deployed 21 armies representing a total of 1,400,000 men, 31,000 guns and mortars, 5200 tanks and assault guns, plus 5000 aircraft. Russian strength was only one part of the equation, though, for Hitler's insistence on no withdrawal aided the Red Army. The Russians simply encircled vast numbers of German units. When Army Group Centre was destroyed, for example, 17 divisions were annihilated. The Waffen-SS could only achieve localised successes, and by 1944 even the supermen were faltering. Defeat for the Third Reich was now inevitable on the Eastern Front, the only uncertain factor was when this would occur.

NO RESPITE

By the spring of 1944 STAVKA, the Soviet High Command, had decided that Belorussia was to be the Red Army's next priority in the north. Stalin intended that the Red Army would drive from its starting point east of Lake Peipus, along a line running through Gorki in the centre, skirting the Pripet Marshes, and on to Odessa on the shores of the Black Sea, and push the Germans back some 650km (400 miles) to the very gates of Warsaw itself. For this task he mustered a massive force of 19 armies and two tank armies, with some 1300 aircraft in support.

On the night of 22 June 1944, the main assault began, with the Russians ripping through Army Group Centre. Within just seven days, the entire length of a 320km (200-mile) front stretching from Ostrov on the Lithuanian border to Kovel on the edge of the Pripet Marshes had been completely overrun. In the weeks that followed, some 350,000 German troops were eliminated.

On 25 June 1944 the *Totenkopf* Division was immediately ordered north from Romania to help fend off the Soviet attack west of Minsk. The roads, however, were chaotic, and the division did not reach its destination until 7 July. By then, the Red Army was advancing rapidly towards Grodno, endangering the southern flank of the 4th Army and the northern flank of the battered remnants of the 2nd Army. The *Totenkopf* Division held the line at Grodno for 11 days against massive odds, before being ordered to withdraw towards the southeast to join the mass of German troops retreating slowly towards Warsaw.

Left: The face of the German Army on the Eastern Front in 1944: heavy fatigue due to constant fighting and apprehension about the Red Army's seemingly unstoppable advance.

In the centre, the Russian westward drive continued. Since 16 July, German counter-attacks had tried in vain to crush the 3rd Belorussian Front's bridgehead over the Niemen, and on 28 July the front advanced from its bridgeheads. By 31 August, when it took Kovno, it had covered 48km (30 miles). On 20 July, the left wing of the 1st Belorussian Front had broken through the German defences near Kovel, crossing the western Bug into Poland.

Zakharov's 2nd Belorussian Front had a more difficult passage, for by mid-July over 10 German divisions had been concentrated on the Grodno-Svisloch line; a defence had been organised and the Germans had begun a number of large- and small-scale counterattacks. However, when Zakharov brought up his reserve army the German force was broken and its reserves swept aside. The armies of the 2nd Belorussian Front surged through Bialystok, and by the end of July stood on the East Prussian border.

Above: The Germans abandon another Russian town in the face of the Red Army's mid-1944 offensive, which saw the Russians reach the East Prussian border by August 1944. The Eastern Rampart was failing.

These latest defeats convinced the German High Command that the only chance of halting the Russian offensive was to fall back to the line of the Vistula where it might be easier to build a stable defence. An immediate withdrawal began, with the Soviet spearheads hard on the heels of the German rearguards. Lublin fell to the 1st Belorussian Front on 23 July and Brest Litovsk was captured on the 28th.

A sombre occasion was the Soviet liberation of the Nazi death camp at Maidanek, 2km (1.25 miles) west of Lublin, where some 1,500,000 prisoners had been liquidated and the foulest atrocities perpetrated.

While the battle for Brest Litovsk was still in progress, the left wing of the 1st Belorussian

Front was racing towards the Vistula and Warsaw. Between 28 July and 2 August, two bridgeheads were forced across the Vistula south of Warsaw, and throughout August these bridgeheads were the scene of furious battles as the Germans desperately tried to destroy the Soviet footholds on the west bank. The Luftwaffe increased its attacks, and the German ground forces were greatly strengthened by the arrival of two panzer and five infantry divisions during August, as well as four infantry and motorised brigades. The Soviet forces succeeded in holding their bridgeheads with great difficulty, but were not strong enough to extend them and continue the offensive.

Northeast of Warsaw, armoured units of the 1st Belorussian Front had reached the Radzymin-Wolomin area, only to run into stiff German resistance. Here, too, the offensive was halted. A successful defence was followed by a spirited German counterattack by four panzer divisions and one infantry division, which recovered Radzymin and Wolomin, dealt out heavy losses to the Soviet armoured formations, and forced them back 24-32km (15-20 miles) to the south. At last it seemed that the Eastern Front was steady again.

As soon as the first Polish territory was liberated the Committee of National Liberation, led by the Polish Communist Party, became active. Functioning as a provisional government, the Committee had already issued a manifesto entitled *To the Polish People*. This manifesto called on all Poles to fight together

Below: A brief respite for these two* Wiking *Division grenadiers allows them to get their bearings, but there is only one way to go – west. The division was pushed back all the way to the River Vistula by August 1944.

with the Red Army for the freedom and independence of Poland. It also drew up the main features of a programme of radical social change, the building of a new, democratic Poland (troops of the Polish 1st Army were serving in the ranks of the 1st Belorussian Front in the liberation of eastern Poland).

The Red Army begins to stall

As large German reinforcements concentrated on the Vistula Line, resistance stiffened and Soviet problems were increased by serious supply difficulties, particularly in fuel and ammunition, as the Red Army formations had advanced over 480km (300 miles) since 23 June. But the offensive was maintained: all military vehicles were mobilised to get the supplies up to the front, and the civilian population in the liberated areas proffered every possible assistance to the Soviet forces. The Belorussian partisans struck boldly at the German forces, cut their communications, wiped out individual German units, and gave them no chance to blow up bridges or remove valuable materials as they retreated.

When the Red Army reached the approaches to East Prussia and the bank of the Vistula, it had outrun its strength after its sweep through Belorussia. The Soviet troops, already fatigued and considerably weakened in the preceding battles, now had to beat off strong German counterattacks in the Shyaulyay area, east of Warsaw, and in the Magnuszew and Pulawy bridgeheads. By the end of July, it was already clear that the Germans would be able to hold a solid defensive front along the East Prussian approaches and the Narew and Vistula rivers. And now, with the Red Army rapidly approaching the Polish capital, but with the Soviet offensive petering out, the Polish Home Army resistance movement launched the Warsaw Rising. As the Polish Home Army rose up in open revolt on 1 August, the Germans were stunned at the strength of the uprising and initially lost almost two-thirds of the city to the valiant Polish fighters. With the Red Army so near, the Poles believed the city would be taken from the Germans.

What the Poles did not realise was that the Red Army's advance was rapidly running out of steam. Moreover, the Germans were aware of the tired state of the Soviet troops and could concentrate on putting down the uprising. Stalin cynically allowed the Germans to deal with the Poles, as he wanted Poland to be under Soviet occupation after the war. Just to make sure, he refused the Western Allies the use of Soviet air bases from which to launch supply missions, and disassociated the Soviets from what he called the 'Warsaw venture'.

The aim of the rising, as the Polish reactionaries who organised it openly stated at the time, was not to help the Red Army to liberate Poland, but to obstruct it. They considered that by seizing the capital they could establish themselves in power and prevent Stalin's 'people's democratic order' from being established in Poland.

German reorganisation

On 21 July 1944, Hitler ordered General Guderian to take over command of the Eastern Front. His task was to reorganise it and halt the Red Army offensive. The Vistula, with a bridgehead on the east bank at Praga, was adopted as the new line of defence, and Guderian appointed General Vordman to command the sector of the middle Vistula between Jablonna and Deblin. Vordman had commanded the 9th Army which had been almost obliterated in Belorussia in June. The 2nd Army was to concentrate along the lower reaches of the Bug, north of the 9th Army.

As this regrouping was taking place, but before the new defensive measures could become effective, the frontline was nearing the Vistula, and all the while the German evacuation from Warsaw was being accelerated. Between 21 and 25 July, German stores, workshops, civilian institutions and military command alike left Warsaw. Police and army units were also pulling out.

Then, on 26 July, the directives of the new commander of the German front began to take effect. German administrative authorities and the police returned to Warsaw. On 27 July,

Above: A brief rest for these Germans on the Eastern Front in mid-1944 as they pull back in the face of Russian pressure. For Hitler and his Third Reich it was a moment of crisis, but the Waffen-SS would come to the rescue.

Luftwaffe General Stahel took over military command of Warsaw. German civilian authorities announced that the city would be defended against the Red Army, and called upon the Polish population of the capital to cooperate; through the street public address system and wall posters they commanded that 100,00 men come forward to put up fortifications round the city. Guards at German institutions were strengthened, assault guns were placed at main street intersections, and police and tank patrols in the city were increased. Units of the German 73rd Infantry Division began arriving on the outskirts of Warsaw.

During the night of 28 July and on the days that followed, Warsaw could hear the sound of the battle being fought for the town of Wolomin between the German XXXIX Panzer Corps and the Soviet 2nd Tank Army. On 21 July 1944, the Communist National Council set up a Committee of National Liberation, which it intended to foist upon the country as a political authority. When, on 23 July, Moscow radio published a manifesto to the Polish nation issued by this committee, it described the Polish Government in London and its organs in Poland as usurpers.

These moves seemed to indicate that the Soviet Union was going to try to impose its will upon Poland through this Committee of

National Liberation, without regard to the Polish Government in London. On 30 July, the Polish Prime Minister Stanislaw Mikolajczyk arrived in Moscow from London. On 31 July, he had his first conversation with Soviet Foreign Secretary, Molotov, on how to coordinate the campaign against the Germans in Poland.

The Polish insurgents

The commander-in-chief of the Home Army, General Tadeusz Komorowski (codenamed Bor), had decided that the Home Army would, at an opportune moment, attack the German troops in Warsaw. This would shorten the fight for control of the city and minimise losses, and in any case would enable the Home Army to meet the entering Red Army as hosts and masters in their own city.

General Bor estimated that a rapid capture of Warsaw was in Soviet interests, both politically, since it was the capital, and militarily, since it was the largest and most convenient communications centre on the Vistula from which to launch a further advance west. On 25 July, General Bor obtained the agreement of the London Poles to engage in a battle for Warsaw and presented this decision to the presidium of the Polish underground parliament, and duly obtained its agreement. Bor informed the Commander of the Warsaw District, Colonel Antoni Chrusciel (codenamed Monter), and gave the order to get the district ready for action. The action was to follow the plan of the general uprising, for which the units of the district had been preparing for three years.

The Poles faced an opponent about equal numerically, but overwhelmingly superior in armament and technical facilities, who could also call upon air and armoured support, neither of which the Home Army possessed.

The numerical strength of Home Army units in Warsaw was approximately 38,000 soldiers, of which about 4000 were women. Units of the Home Army belonging to the Warsaw District and based in the vicinity of the capital numbered approximately 11,000. These forces and their chain of command were organised in seven urban and one suburban precincts, which in their turn were subdivided into sectors. The armament consisted of heavy and light infantry weapons and was sufficient for 25 per cent of the effectives, and there was enough ammunition for seven days of fighting. Deficiencies were to be supplemented by captured weapons from Germans, and supplies of arms were also expected from the west, through the usual aerial drops which had been going on for the last three years.

Besides the units mentioned, there were two organisations in Warsaw not subordinated to the Home Army. They were *Narodowe Sily Zbrojne* (NSZ), or the National Armed Forces, a right-wing, nationalist federation; and *Armia Ludowa* (AL), the People's Army, a Communist organisation wholly subordinate to Moscow. Each movement had a few hundred men in the city, and their units later joined the fight at the side of the Home Army.

The Warsaw Uprising begins

The numerical strength of the German garrison was estimated by the Home Army at about 40,000. Some units had been pulled out between 21 and 25 July, but every day other units were being quartered in or near the capital, and there were reasons to believe that numerically the Polish and German sides were evenly matched. On 31 July, at the afternoon briefing of the commanders of the Home Army, Colonel Monter, Commander of the Warsaw District, reported that the German bridgehead on the east bank of the Vistula had been breached by Soviet armour and that its defence had been disorganised. According to the report, Soviet detachments had taken the suburban localities of Radosc, Milosna, Okuniew, and Radzymin.

On the basis of this report, in the presence of Deputy Prime Minister Jankowski, General Bor ordered Colonel Monter to attack the Germans on the following day, 1 August at 1700 hours. On the very same day, at 1830 hours, Colonel Monter issued his orders to the units under his command, though some of them did not receive them until the following morning, as the police curfew delayed their transmission.

Above: German troops in a Polish town in July 1944. The Russian 1944 summer offensive saw the Red Army advance 730km (450 miles) in five weeks, though it then began to outrun its supply lines.

The military situation round the German bridgehead that day was as follows: Soviet armoured detachments did make a breach in the southern perimeter of the bridgehead, even capturing the general commanding the German 73rd Infantry Division, but the German defence had not been disorganised and they were not forced to retreat from the east bank of the Vistula. At the same time, a battle between German and Soviet armour was being fought round Siedlce, farther east, and its outcome was not yet clear.

The concentration of Home Army units at their assembly points was carried out in the afternoon of 1 August without German counter action, although owing to the secrecy needed only 85 per cent of the troops managed to reach their appointed places.

At 1700 hours, Home Army units launched their attacks at prearranged objectives. Within minutes the entire city was engulfed in fighting, German patrols and troops in the streets were attacked and disarmed, and many objectives, those which were not powerfully reinforced or strongly manned, were captured. Those which were properly manned, however, managed to repulse Home Army assaults. Where the initial attacks were not successful, they were renewed during the night, many of them several times, and those parts of the city cleared of the Germans were occupied by the Home Army.

Throughout 2-3 August, the Home Army renewed its general assault on German strongpoints not taken on the first day, but it was not particularly successful for it lacked the heavy assault weapons necessary to reduce pillboxes and other reinforced concrete defences.

Both sides suffered heavy casualties in killed and wounded. The Poles captured a con-

siderable quantity of both weapons and ammunition, but German resistance, though largely uncoordinated at the outset, proved very strong almost everywhere.

The intensity of the fighting exacted its toll, and on the Polish side ammunition ran low despite the quantities captured. This, combined with the mounting casualties and disappointing outcome of the attacks on 2 and 3 August, dampened the momentum of Home Army offensive operations.

Bach-Zelewski takes control

Then, to the disappointment of all, the sounds of the battle waging on the east bank of the Vistula between German and Soviet forces, which up until then had been steadily gaining in intensity, grew fainter on 3 August, to be followed the next day by complete silence. In addition, the Red Air Force disappeared from the sky above Warsaw on 2 August.

Having considered all these factors and after consulting Bor, Colonel Monter ordered his troops to abandon their offensive tasks and to switch to defence as from 5 August. At the conclusion of this initial stage of the fighting, the Home Army controlled three-fifths of the Warsaw itself.

Documents captured by the Germans over the previous years had already given them a fragmentary idea of the plan for general uprising planned by the Home Army. Judging by the behaviour and attitude of the Polish population, they counted on the possibility of a Polish attack in the last days of July, but they believed that such an attack would take place at night.

When reports of the fighting reached Hitler and Himmler, their reaction was instantaneous. On 2 August 1944, Hitler appointed a new commander for units engaged against the Polish rising, SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS und Polizei Erich von

Left: A Tiger tank of the* Wiking *Division outside Warsaw in August 1944. The division was part of IV SS Panzer Corps, which threw the Red Army back just before the city in August, stabilising the front temporarily.

Left: SS-Oberführer Oskar Dirlewanger, whose brigade fought in the Warsaw Uprising. Composed of murderers, rapists and other criminals, it committed many atrocities in the city during the fighting.

dem Bach-Zelewski, a specialist in fighting partisan movements behind the front and possessing a special staff experienced in this kind of warfare. In Warsaw, Bach-Zelewski was determined to crush the Polish revolt with every means at his disposal. Himmler's reaction was to rush reinforcements by both road and rail to Warsaw, and these consisted of infantry and police. One brigade was recruited from criminals serving prison sentences and was commanded by SS-Oberführer der Reserve Dr Oskar Dirlewanger. The SS-Sturmbrigade *Dirlewanger* became notorious for its actions in Warsaw during the Polish uprising. One regiment of around 1700 men, under Lieutenant-Colonel Vrolov, was detached from the SS Assault Brigade RONA, commanded by Waffen-Brigadeführer Bronislav Vladislavovich Kaminiski, and sent to the Polish capital to assist in the suppression of the revolt. It arrived on 5 August, but was withdrawn three weeks later on the orders of Bach-Zelewski because of its atrocious conduct and general lack of discipline. Kaminiski himself was in Warsaw for only about 10 days. Later he was arrested by the SS in Lodz and charged with looting, an offence punishable by death. He was actually shot by an SS firing squad on being found guilty. His death, however, was officially attributed to a Polish partisan ambush on the road to Lodz.

The fighting in Warsaw

During the succeeding stages of the fighting, Bach-Zelewski received considerable reinforcements in heavy artillery, including large 610mm siege guns, rocket launchers and flamethrowers.

The Polish attack had split the German forces inside the city into a few isolated pockets cut off from one another. One of the largest was in the Bruhl Palace in Plac Teatralny, where General Stahel had his headquarters and which was manned by a considerable number of SS and police. The Germans retained control of the suburb of Praga, where Home Army units were crushed after two days of fighting. They also held the Warsaw Citadel, the airfields at Okecie and Bielany, and the wireless transmitters at Boernerowo.

After the first four days of the fighting, the areas controlled by the two sides became stabilised. Both the Home Army and the Germans built barricades round their perimeters.

Besides a number of fortified strongpoints within the Polish lines, the Germans also controlled wedges of territory which probed deep into the city, and divided the sectors in Polish hands so that they became three separate centres of fighting. In the south of the city were Mokotow and Czerniakow; centrally placed was the city centre proper with Powisle, on the low-lying river bank; and in the north was the

Old Town, with Zoliborz separate from it, but maintaining contact with Home Army units in the Forest of Kampinos not far away.

Colonel Monter found that exercising direct command over these separate perimeters from his own headquarters in the city centre was difficult and so, on 6 August, he reorganised the structure of command to reflect the realities of the situation. He nominated Colonel S. Kaminsky (codenamed Daniel) to command Mokotow and Czerniakow; Colonel E. Pfeiffer (codenamed Radwan) to command Centre and Powisle; and Colonel K. Ziemski (codenamed Wachnowski) to command the Old Town, with Zoliborz and the Forest of Kampinos also subordinated to him, the whole being designated Group North. The tasks set for these three commanders were to maintain their perimeters and overcome nests of German resistance still surviving within the Polish-held areas.

German counterattacks

The Germans' first operational task was to forge routes from the west to the bridgehead at Praga. This task was given to two groups, one attacking from the southwest along the axis Aleje Jerozolimskie/Poniatowski Bridge, and the other from the west, along the axis Wola/Kierbedzia Bridge. The attacking forces had the support of an artillery barrage and air support from Luftflotte V, which bombed the Polish positions and the city at large using fragmentation and incendiary bombs. The original aim, to overcome the Polish Army by setting the whole town alight and smoking it out, was abandoned, as it was feared that the centres of German resistance within the Polish lines would also be wiped out in the conflagration.

The German attempt to establish a permanent route to the Poniatowski Bridge failed. A part of the 19th Panzer Division did fight its way across it from Praga to the west on 4 August, but later the Home Army effectively blocked the route between the Central Railway Station and Ulica Bracka. By 8 August, the German Army managed to establish the Wola/Kierbedzia Bridge axis, after bitter fighting and tank attacks, but even then a few sectors of this route remained permanently exposed to Polish fire.

During this stage of the fighting the Germans carried out mass executions of prisoners of war, of civilians and of the wounded in hospitals, including the entire staff of doctors and nurses. In some cases Polish civilians were driven in front of attacking German tanks to give protection against fire from Polish barricades.

After blasting their way through to the Kierbedzia Bridge, the Germans needed to capture the Old Town. On 12 August they launched their assault using three groups, attacking from the south, the west and the north, and supported by an heavy artillery barrage, flamethrowers, Goliaths (exploding miniature tanks steered by cable from the German lines) and aerial bombardment.

The Waffen-SS is forced back

The Soviet offensive had been renewed on 14 August, with an attempt to surround the Polish capital and attacks over the Vistula to the north and west of the city. However, IV SS Panzer Corps, with a powerful force of the *Totenkopf* and *Wiking* Divisions, was ready and waiting. For a full week the Russians battered the German positions without success, and were eventually forced to withdraw to regroup. On 25 August a massive new offensive was launched, principally against the *Totenkopf* Division's positions, and gradually the German forces were forced to fall back towards Warsaw itself.

The Polish forces, by then completely surrounded and deprived of regular supplies from outside, were losing ground every day. Night attacks regained some of the ground lost during the day, but the ceaseless artillery and aerial bombardment inflicted a mounting toll of casualties on the civilians, many of whom were buried under collapsed buildings. Nevertheless, the attitude of the population was as unflinching as that of the Home Army garrison.

To maintain communications, to evacuate light casualties and to bring in supplies of ammunition, routes were established between

the city centre and Zoliborz via the sewers in mid-August. They were difficult to negotiate, but skilled guides, many of them women, kept them serviceable throughout.

After reinforcing the garrison of Zoliborz with a battalion brought from the Forest of Kampinos, the commander of Group North made two attempts to break the German ring surrounding the Old Town. An attack launched from Zoliborz on Dworzec Gdanski, a railway station, during the night of 19 August was unsuccessful, and during the following night the same station was attacked from two sides, from Zoliborz and the Old Town. Again the attack failed to break the German ring.

The Old Town falls

On 31 August, the garrison of the Old Town carried out Colonel Monter's new order to evacuate to the city centre. About 1500 men and 300 walking wounded made their way out through the sewers without alerting the Germans, while 800 more withdrew to Zoliborz in the same way. The German attack launched the next morning found nothing. However, those wounded whom it had been impossible to evacuate through the sewers were killed by the Germans; most of them were soaked in petrol and burned alive.

While the fight for the Old Town was going on, other sectors remained relatively quiet. In the city centre the Home Army took a few isolated buildings which had been in German hands, and which were stubbornly defended floor by floor.

Having taken the Old Town, the Germans commanded a wide stretch of Warsaw separating the city centre from Zoliborz. The latter now became a separate centre of fighting, as Group North had ceased to exist and its commander, Colonel Wachnowski, had become Colonel Monter's deputy upon reaching the city centre.

The Warsaw Uprising entered its third stage, resistance to the last. The defenders were kept going by the hope that they would last until the Germans, unable to resist Red Army pressure, would be forced to retreat from the city. The Home Army now finally gave up all offensive operations in favour of intensified defence of the positions it held.

Counting on the possibility that the Red Army would eliminate their bridgehead at Praga, and that the Polish Home Army would then have direct contact across the river with the Soviets, the Germans set out to throw back the Home Army units occupying the river bank between the Poniatowski and Kierbedzia Bridges. After three days of fighting, beginning on 4 September, the Germans were masters of the river front and had pushed back the Poles into the city centre.

The inexorable German advance

From 8 September they concentrated their attacks on the city centre, trying to drive wedges into the Polish perimeter at several points, but repeated attacks along Aleje Jerozolimskie, one of the original east-west axes, achieved only minor breaches in the Polish positions.

The fighting was now entering its sixth week, and as hopes of Soviet assistance for the rising waned and as the suffering of the civilian population increased, the political section of the Resistance asked Home Army Headquarters to explore the possibility of a negotiated surrender with the German command.

On 7 September, an opportunity of direct talks arose through the intermediary of the Polish Red Cross. Red Cross representatives obtained a ceasefire of a few hours' duration along some sectors of the perimeter, and on 8 and 9 September several thousand women, children, old people and lightly wounded left Warsaw. Only a small proportion of the civilian population chose to be evacuated in this way, about a quarter of a million opting to remain in the city centre rather than give themselves up to the Germans. The inhabitants of the capital felt that they would stay as long as the fight continued to help the Home Army, especially as they felt the battle was a fight involving the whole city, not just the troops.

The attempt at exploratory talks with the Germans was not pursued, as on 10 September

Above: Shown here in the uniforms of the POA after their transfer from the Russische Befreiungsarmee, these Russians took part in suppressing the Warsaw Uprising. Their conduct in the city was atrocious.

Red Army units, including one Polish division, launched an assault on the German bridgehead at Praga. After five days the German troops had been driven out, and the east bank of the Vistula opposite the Polish positions in Zoliborz, Solec and Czerniakow was in the hands of the Red Army, so that contact across the river was now possible.

However, without letting up their pressure against the city centre, and while maintaining a harassing artillery fire and aerial bombardment of Zoliborz and Mokotow, even launching diversionary attacks against them, the Germans now set about pushing the Home Army back altogether from the west bank of the Vistula. They carried this out in three phases.

Between 14-16 September, the newly arrived 25th Panzer Division, supported by air attacks, pushed Home Army units in Zoliborz about 1km (0.62 miles) back from the river where they managed to hold out in new defensive positions. At the same time, in Czerniakow in the south of the city, a German attack along the river also captured the river bank, pushing back the Polish defenders.

The Polish side now held only a narrow strip of the river bank south of the Poniatowski Bridge and north of Czerniakow. It was defended by units of the local precinct, reinforced by élite troops withdrawn from the Old Town and commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Jan Mazurkiewicz. On 11 September, overwhelming German forces launched an attack on this area. A grim battle followed, fought day and night in a very restricted space; individual buildings changed hand several times in repeated attacks and counterattacks, and there was almost continuous hand-to-hand fighting.

Here, too, the Germans spared no one, carrying out mass executions of captured prisoners, of the wounded in hospitals and of civilians.

The Polish garrison in the city centre carried out several attacks in the direction of the escarpment dominating the low-lying battlefield on the river bank in an attempt to link up with the units there, and it scored some initial successes, but could not maintain them in the face of powerful German counterattacks.

The bitter last battles

On 19 September, after eight days and nights of continuous fighting, the battle reached a point of crisis. The Polish defenders, surrounded in an area 500 square metres (1640 square feet), were down to their last rounds of ammunition and had exhausted their food and medical dressings. They had no water supplies other than the river, and had reached the limits of physical endurance. Lieutenant-Colonel Radoslaw therefore decided to withdraw part of his forces through the sewers to Mokotow, while another group was to cover the withdrawal of the seriously wounded across the Vistula to the Soviet side. Facing terrific German fire, the latter units held out for two more days, covering the evacuation carried out by boat at night. It was possible to evacuate only a small proportion of the wounded in this way, and on 23 September the Germans overran the Polish positions. The entire length of the river bank was now in German hands.

While the Home Army was fighting to maintain its hold on the west bank, the Soviet Polish 1st Army found itself on the opposite bank as part of Marshal Rokossovsky's forces. Units of this army made a number of attempts to cross to the west bank, and on the nights of 16 and 17 September some detachments of the 6th Infantry Regiment crossed over to Zoliborz, although by that time the Home Army garrison had been driven off the river bank, to be decimated by the Germans.

On the nights of 15 and 16 September, two battalions and the regimental headquarters of the 9th Infantry Regiment crossed over to Czerniakow, where they joined the forces under Lieutenant-Colonel Radoslaw. At the same time, the 8th Infantry Regiment made an unsuccessful attempt to get a foothold on the west bank near Poniatowski Bridge, and the 1st Cavalry Brigade made an equally unsuccessful an attempt near Kierbedzia Bridge.

Next came the turn of Mokotow. After an artillery barrage and bombing lasting some days, and after reinforcing their troops there with the 19th Panzer Division, on 24 September the Germans launched attacks simultaneously from the south and the west. After a three-day battle the Polish forces were compressed into a small area affording no chance of defence.

During the night of 26 September, a part of the garrison of Mokotow entered the sewers to withdraw to the city centre. The Germans had expected this, and obstructed the sewers, tossing gas grenades into them, creating panic and causing heavy losses. Many men and women perished and only about 600 managed to reach city centre. The remainder of the garrison of Mokotow, about 2000 men laid down their arms at noon of 27 September.

The final blow

Immediately after this surrender, the Germans moved the 19th Panzer Division north of the city, and on the following day their forces facing the garrison of Zoliborz began their assault on the Polish lines. After two days of stubborn fighting, during which the defenders had to yield ground. Their position greatly worsened, but their commander, Lieutenant-Colonel M. Niedzielski, rejected a German proposal to capitulate. By this time the Home Army Headquarters itself was considering surrendering, provided the German conditions were acceptable. Further resistance in Zoliborz was deemed pointless, and so on 30 September, following an order from the Home Army Commander-in-Chief, its garrison of about 1500

Right: Warsaw burns as the Germans eradicate the last remnants of Polish resistance. It had cost Bach-Zelewski 26,000 men to put down the revolt – it cost the Poles a lot more in terms of blood.

men laid down their weapons. Thus ended an epic and heroic uprising.

At the same time as the operations against Mokotow and Zoliborz, the Germans set out to dislodge the Home Army from the Forest of Kampinos. These troops, two infantry regiments and two cavalry squadrons, about 2500 men in all, were commanded by Major A. Kotowski. They acted in an auxiliary capacity in the uprising, receiving aerial drops from the West, transporting them to Zoliborz, and generally harassing German communications from the rear.

A special group detached from the German 9th Army, designated Sterschuppe, began operations against the forest on 27 September. Major Kotowski had recognised the German build-up and moved his troops to the southern edge of the forest, intending to break out to the south. The German attack thus missed its target, and met only rearguard units. Major Kotowski's column moved south from the forest until it came upon the Skierniewice-Zyrandow railway line, where at noon on 29 September an armoured train barred its way. Detachments of German tanks then caught up with it and dispersed it, but only one cavalry squadron, about 100 troopers managed to fight its way through to Kielce province.

The last pockets of resistance

Towards the end of September the situation of the insurgents was becoming more critical with every day that passed. They had lost control of the river bank, the outlying bastions of Mokotow and Zoliborz had fallen, and the Forest of Kampinos was in German hands. Ammunition was running out, insufficient water was being drawn from improvised wells, and they were short of medical supplies. From 20 September onwards barley and sugar were their only sustenance. The troops had no warm clothing, and instances of soldiers fainting at barricades from exhaustion were becoming more frequent.

After consultations with the civilian Resistance leaders, the Home Army Headquarters, accepted that to continue fighting would not bring the aims of the uprising any nearer, though it would prolong the suffering and losses of the population. SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS und Polizei Erich von dem Bach-Zelewski's invitation to enter into negotiations made through the Polish Red Cross was therefore accepted. A general ceasefire was agreed on 2 October, and on that day a Polish delegation signed an act of surrender at the German headquarters at Ozarow.

To the victor the spoils

After more than two months of fighting the Polish troops laid down their arms. The Germans evacuated the entire remaining population of the city and proceeded to systematically destroy whatever was left standing. Any moveables worth taking were shipped to the Reich. It is impossible to arrive at an estimate of civilian losses with any accuracy, but the figure of 150,00 may be close to reality. German losses, according to Bach-Zelewski, amounted to 26,000.

As with the earlier revolts, Himmler wished to see this fight as a battle honour for the SS, so the Warsaw Shield was instituted on 10 December 1944 and was intended to be awarded 'as a battle badge to members of the Armed Forces and non-military personnel who between 1 August and 2 October 1944 were honourably engaged in the fighting in Warsaw'. The award was to have been made by the commander Bach-Zelewski, but the factory producing the awards was bombed out, and so none were issued.

Outside Warsaw, the *Totenkopf* Division was unable to rapidly make good its losses, whereas the Soviets were back up to strength and ready to launch yet another attack against the city by 10 October. This time the weakened Germans were forced back to the northwest of the city, but managed to stabilise their positions quickly and halt the Soviets once again.

By the end of October 1944, Romania and Bulgaria had capitulated and defected to the Soviets, while in the north Finland had sued for peace. The Red Army's 1st Baltic Front had

retaken Memel in Lithuania on 10 October, while Yeremenko's 2nd Baltic Front had captured Riga, the Latvian capital. The Russian offensive had cut off two entire German armies in Courland, comprising some 33 divisions. Rather than tie up a considerable number of troops in trying to eliminate them, STAVKA chose an air and sea blockade of the pocket.

Among the units able to escape by sea were the remaining Dutch SS volunteers from the *Nederland* Brigade. The ship evacuating them was attacked and sunk, but some of the Dutch SS men did survive and formed the nucleus of the 23rd Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nederland*. The unit went back into action at Stargard in Pommerania and also saw action at Stettin, before being forced back towards Berlin itself.

A weakened Army Group Centre

In January 1945 the Red Army was ordered to drive the Germans out of Poland. Marshal Zhukov and his 1st Belorussian Front was to drive to Poznan, while Marshal Koniev would direct his assault towards Breslau to the south. Each massive force comprised over one million men, with over 30,000 guns and 7000 tanks between them. Opposing them was a weakened Army Group Centre with 400,000 men and just over 1000 tanks. That said, the Germans still had some 580,000 troops in East Prussia.

On 12 January Koniev's attack began after a massive artillery barrage lasting 105 minutes. Two days later Zhukov's forces joined in the assault, his forces aiding the Soviet-formed 1st Polish Army in taking Warsaw. During the second half of January the Red Army seized Silesia, one of Germany's most important industrial regions, rich in coal deposits, and by early February had reached the River Oder. Those German strongpoints, such as Breslau, which had withstood the Soviet onslaught were merely bypassed, to be dealt with later.

All along the front, the Waffen-SS divisions were being destroyed by the Russian offensive. By the spring of 1945, most of them were carrying out a spirited fighting withdrawal through Hungary and into Austria. The *Wiking* Division was all but destroyed in the fighting for the approaches to Vienna. In the central and northern sectors of the Eastern Front, those Waffen-SS units still in action were principally east and west European volunteer formations. The level of determination shown by these volunteers in their attempts to hold the Soviet advance was quite exceptional, if not entirely surprising. Those units raised from eastern European states no longer had any homelands to return to as their nations had been conquered by the Russians and were now in Stalin's iron grip. The only option was to try and reach the Western Allies in order to surrender. Those who surrendered to the Soviets were usually shot out of hand.

Above: The Warsaw Shield commemorating those who 'were honourably engaged in the fighting in Warsaw'. Ironically, it was never issued as the factory producing the awards was destroyed in an Allied bombing raid.

THE BLACK GUARD DIES

From August 1944, as the Red Army drove through Romania and Bulgaria, Hitler's east European allies deserted him. As Army Groups E and F, under Field Marshal von Weichs, were forced back through Yugoslavia, the ethnic volunteer 7th SS Freiwilligen-Gebirgs Division *Prinz Eugen* was decimated south of Vukovar in January 1945, and the survivors withdrew into Austria.

In Hungary, the capital Budapest came under the protection of General Otto Wöhler's Army Group South. Units committed to the defence of the city included the 8th SS Kavallerie Division *Florian Geyer*, 22nd Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division der SS *Maria Theresia* and 18th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Horst Wessel*, although some of the latter's units were sent to Galicia and others helped suppress the Slovak Uprising during August-October 1944.

In October 1944 the Red Army crossed the Hungarian border and raced for the Danube, reaching the river to the south of Budapest and establishing a bridgehead on the west bank, from where it could launch future operations.

To the southwest of the city lay Lake Balaton, between which and the area around Budapest the Germans had established strong defensive positions. By 20 December 1944, the Soviets had advanced across the Danube and reached the southern shore of Lake Balaton.

Left: A fine study of a Panther and grenadiers of IV SS Panzer Corps in January 1945. The corps attempted to relieve Budapest, but the city fell to the Russians in February 1945.

The main German defences, however, proved a difficult nut for the Red Army to crack, as by this stage of the war the Germans were making use of natural defence lines, such as rivers, and 'fortress cities'. The Soviets had also overstretched their supply lines. The breathing space for the Germans was short, though. Marshal Tolbukhin diverted his attack past the east of Budapest, and with the 6th Guards Tank Army attacking from the northeast and the 46th Army from the south, the city was eventually surrounded in a massive Russian pincer action. Fighting raged for sometime, the Soviets unable to rout the Germans and the latter unable to throw back the attackers.

Budapest falls

On 26 December 1944, IV SS Panzer Corps, comprising the 3rd SS Panzer Division *Totenkopf* and the 5th SS Panzer Division *Wiking*, were transferred from the Warsaw area in an attempt to relieve Budapest. Two attempts to raise the siege of the city were beaten back by the Soviets, before they in turn launched a counterattack which forced IV SS Panzer Corps on to the defensive. The beleaguered garrison struggled on, but the odds had been impossible. After two weeks of fighting, the relief attempt had to be called off. The garrison, weakened and forced into a small area, attempted a breakout on 11 February 1945, when some 30,000 of the troops inside the city tried to force a way to the west. But the retreating Germans were cut to pieces: the 8th SS Kavallerie Division *Florian Geyer* and 22nd Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division der SS *Maria Theresia* were annihilated, and only 800 of the survivors broke the encirclement and reached the safety of the German lines. Among them were 170 troops of the Waffen-SS, all that remained of the 8th and 22nd Kavallerie Divisions. *Florian Geyer*'s youthful commander, SS-Brigadeführer und Generalmajor der Waffen-SS Joachim Rumohr, committed suicide after being wounded while attempting to escape from the Hungarian capital. Budapest surrendered on 12 February.

Left: Mud massively affected the war on the Eastern Front. It totally destroyed mobility, as the 6th SS Panzer Army found to its cost at the beginning of Operation 'Spring Awakening' in March 1945.

The survivors of the two SS cavalry divisions formed the nucleus of a new unit – 37th SS Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division *Lützow* – but it never reached the strength of one regiment, and existed for only three months before being swallowed up in the Russian advance.

The fall of Budapest released a large number of Russian troops for a fresh offensive against the Third Reich, which threatened the German-held oilfields at Nagykanizsa, Hungary. Hitler was horrified at the thought of losing this precious source of oil, and decided that only a new offensive could throw the Red Army back over the Danube and save the overall situation in Hungary.

General Wöhler's Army Group South, comprising the 6th SS Panzer Army, 8th Army, 6th Army and the Hungarian 3rd Army, would strike south from the Margarethe defence lines, while Army Group Southeast's 2nd Army would attack from the west of the Soviet lines. This pincer movement, it was hoped, would crush Tolbukhin's 3rd Ukrainian Front, made up of the 4th Guards Army, 26th Army, 57th Army and 1st Bulgarian Army. IV SS Panzer Corps would remain around Lake Balaton.

The 6th SS Panzer Army

Led by SS-Oberstgruppenführer 'Sepp' Dietrich, the 6th SS Panzer Army consisted of the finest Waffen-SS formations: the *Leibstandarte* Division, *Das Reich* Division, 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* and 12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend*. The *Leibstandarte* Division, led by SS-Brigadeführer Otto Kumm, and the 12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend*, commanded by SS-Oberführer Hugo Kraas, were grouped together as I SS Panzer Corps, while the *Das Reich* Division, temporarily commanded by SS-Standartenführer Rudolf Lehmann, and the 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen*, led by SS-Oberführer Sylvester Stadler, formed II SS Panzer Corps.

The operation was codenamed 'Spring Awakening', but the omens for success were not good. The area around Lake Balaton is predominantly marshy, although under normal circumstances the severe frosts during the early part of the year render the ground hard enough to bear the weight of heavy vehicles. However, in the spring of 1945 the thaw came much earlier than expected, and the terrain was turned into a sea of mud, into which 'Sepp' Dietrich's panzers sank up to their turrets in some extreme instances.

A poor start to 'Spring Awakening'

As a preliminary to the main attack, I SS Panzer Corps had smashed the Soviet bridgehead around Estergom with little difficulty. Once the Soviets became aware of a large body of élite Waffen-SS troops in the region, however, they quickly realised that a major offensive was imminent, and began to strengthen their defences, increasing the depth of their minefields and preparing anti-tank defences. This prelude to the main attack, though successful in its own right, had merely forewarned the Red Army of what was to come.

On 6 March, the day the operation commenced, heavy snow had made conditions even worse. I SS Panzer Corps was best placed for the attack, the men having reached their positions in time, but II SS Panzer Corps was still floundering in the mud, its heavy vehicles finding the going almost impossible. Not surprisingly, the German attack began to suffer heavy losses almost from the start. However, the Waffen-SS soldiers threw themselves into the attack with fanatical bravery, driving the enemy back, in the case of I SS Panzer Corps for distances of up to 40km (25 miles). II SS Panzer Corps, however, could only manage an advance of around 8km (five miles) at best.

As always, the Soviets could make good their losses relatively quickly, while the Germans could only call upon men who were often poorly trained and equipped, and had no motivation to sacrifice their lives at this late stage in the war. The offensive slowed, and German aircraft began to spot evidence of a massive Soviet build-up, obviously intended for a counterattack.

The Soviet offensive began on 16 March along the entire sector west of Budapest. The Russian sledgehammer blow stopped the German offensive in its tracks. Dietrich desperately reshuffled his forces to reinforce the areas under threat, but when he did so the Soviets soon swamped the areas from which the reinforcements had been taken. The 6th SS Panzer Army was in danger of being cut off, as IV SS Panzer Corps struggled to maintain the German base line. *Das Reich* desperately battled to hold open a corridor of escape for its comrades, but the defection of the Hungarian Army left the flank of II SS Panzer Corps wide open to the Soviets. The Germans had no option but to retreat or lose the best remaining divisions they still possessed on the Eastern Front. By 25 March, the Russians had torn a 100km (62-mile) gap in the German defences.

As well as the four élite panzer divisions of the 6th Panzer Army, and the two panzer divisions of IV SS Panzer Corps, the 16th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Reichsführer-SS* and 18th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Horst Wessel*, were also committed to battle around Lake Balaton. *Horst Wessel* had been fortunate enough to escape the encirclement of Budapest and had retreated into Slovakia. Within 10 days of the offensive being launched, however, it had been totally wiped out.

The Waffen-SS in disgrace

Hitler was infuriated by the failure of his Waffen-SS divisions. When the news of the near annihilation of 'Sepp' Dietrich's units – the *Leibstandarte*, *Das Reich*, *Totenkopf* and *Hohenstaufen* Divisions – reached him, he erupted in wild fury. Realising that his order to hold Vienna had been disobeyed, he was horrified that his crack SS units, although completely exhausted and their will to fight diminished, had taken refuge in the city. Hitler cancelled all promotions given on his birthday, 20 April 1945, and ordered that all the surviving members of those units must remove their prized cuff titles. Himmler, who did not have

Above: Waffen-SS soldiers in Poland at the beginning of 1945. By this time the Russians had a superiority of 15 to one on the Eastern Front. It was only the Red Army's over-stretched supply lines which constrained it.

the courage to face his commanders with such an order in person, transmitted it to them in writing instead. On hearing the order, Dietrich summoned the four commanders of those units – Otto Kumm, Karl Kreutz, Hellmuth Becker and Sylvester Stadler – to a conference at his headquarters in Vienna, where he stated categorically that not a cuff title was to be removed, and retorted to his commanders: 'There's your reward for all that you have done these past five years.' He sent a stiff reply to Hitler's headquarters refusing to implement the order. Another story relates that at the same time he packed up his own decorations in a chamber pot and sent them off to Hitler with his reply. Whether this story is true is unknown, but it illustrates Dietrich's feelings. Despite the wrath of Hitler, the professionalism of the Waffen-SS was such that its units continued to fight for him and Germany until the end.

After smashing the German offensive around Lake Balaton, the Soviet advance continued to the west of Budapest in a two-pronged movement towards Pápa and Győr. By 2 April the Red Army had reached the Neusiedler Lake, on the border between Hungary and Austria, and two days later the last German soldiers had been thrown out of Hungary. The Soviet 46th Army was then transported by boat along the Danube to attack Vienna from the north, while the 4th Guards

Army drove towards the city from the south-east. Of the Waffen-SS divisions which had fought in Hungary, most had withdrawn into Austria to defend Vienna.

The 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* had been badly mauled in Hungary, so its remnants were formed into small battle groups, which fought dogged a rearguard action during the withdrawal towards Vienna. The 3rd SS Panzer Division *Totenkopf* also fought in defence of the Austrian capital, while the 12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend* withdrew into strong defensive positions in the mountainous area around Wienerwald, to the southwest of the city, but was then forced out of its positions by the unrelenting Soviet pressure after only a few days.

The fall of Vienna

The *Das Reich* Division put up a stubborn defence to the south of Vienna, before withdrawing into the city itself and becoming involved in bitter fighting around the Florisdorf Bridge on 13 and 14 April. Despite its efforts, it was gradually driven out of the city by intense Russian pressure. Elements continued to fight in the area to the west of Vienna, but the bulk of the division's remnants were sent to the region east of Dresden to help in the futile attempt to hold back Soviet units swarming into Germany itself. The fall of Vienna on 13 April 1945 netted the Soviets over 125,00 prisoners. To the north, the *Der Führer* Regiment was fighting an insurgency in Prague from 6 to 8 May. In its westward retreat from that city, it transported as many of the German population as possible out of Russian hands. However, rather than pursue the retreating Germans, Stalin halted major operations in Austria to concentrate on the push on Berlin.

As the battered German armies on the Eastern Front retreated deep into the Reich,

Left: Inspector of the Wehretüghtigungslarger (Special Military Preparatory Schools) Gerhard Hein, holder of the Knight's Cross with Oakleaves, instructs* Hitlerjugend *recruits in the dying months of the war.

the Waffen-SS divisions were once again to play a major role as rearguard units. The 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg*, serving in Pomerania as part of SS-Obergruppenführer Felix Steiner's 11th Panzer Army in early 1945, took part in an attack on Zhukov's 1st Belorussian Front as it advanced on Berlin. On 16 February, *Frundsberg*, *Nordland*, *Nederland* and *Wallonien* attacked in a southwesterly direction, smashing into Zhukov's northern flank. The weakened German divisions, however, did not have the strength to seriously deflect the massive Soviet assault, and were driven back within a couple of days.

The advance to Berlin

The Russians now took breath for the final push, the capture of Berlin. In the north was Rokossovsky with the 2nd Belorussian Front, in the centre Zhukov with the 1st Belorussian Front, and in the south Koniev with the 1st Ukrainian Front. For the Red Army commanders it was to be a race to see who could reach the Reich's capital first. This rivalry was encouraged by Stalin, who used it to get most out of his commanders. On 28 March 1945, Zhukov had established a bridgehead over the Oder at Küstrin, where he would launch his attack. Wishing to achieve maximum impact, he decided to open his attack with an artillery barrage of unparalleled ferocity, employing over 8000 artillery pieces in a 30-minute barrage. This would be followed by an immediate and massive assault. Zhukov had nearly 150 searchlights brought up to the launch point, intending to bounce their powerful beams off the low cloud cover and blind the German defenders. Koniev, on the other hand, was taking no chances, and intended a prolonged barrage of some 145 minutes, followed by an attack under cover of darkness.

The first probing attacks began on 14 April, and two days latter the main assault began. But the German defenders were aware of Zhukov's plan and withdrew from their positions before the artillery barrage began. Once it had ended, they quickly returned to their positions and were waiting for the Soviet assault troops. The searchlight tactic did not work, as they illuminated the attacking Soviets, making them ideal targets. Despite Zhukov's threats, his troops could not throw the Germans out of their strongly defended positions on the Seelow Heights opposite his bridgehead. Instead of the immediate victory he had expected, three full days of the most bitter fighting were required before the Germans could be slowly forced back. By 19 April, though, the German defences had been overrun, the Seelow Heights captured and Rokossovsky's push from the north launched.

Koniev ordered his 3rd and 4th Guards Tank Armies to break into the city on 20 April, but three days later Stalin had declared that it was to be Zhukov's troops who would make the main assault. Zhukov's men would have the honour of capturing the Führer's bunker and the Reichstag itself. Hitler is said to have inspected some survivors of the 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg* at the bunker on 20 April, and the conditions surrounding the Nazi inner circle had by now become farcical.

The Battle of Berlin

On 21 April Hitler had ordered an attack to relieve the city. General Theodor Busse, defending the Oder Line with his 9th Army to the southeast of Berlin, was to march to the relief of the city. To the west, General Walther Wenck, holding back the Americans, was to do the same, and Steiner's 11th Panzer Army was to launch an attack from the north to relieve Berlin. But it was all fantasy. If Busse and Wenck had abandoned their positions to relieve the city, their pitifully few troops would have been instantly overwhelmed. As for Steiner, his 'panzer army' existed on paper only, as his best troops had already been sacrificed or sent into the city. *Nordland* had been sent into Berlin, *Nederland* was sent south to contain a Soviet attack, and the Walloons had been cut to pieces.

By 25 April Berlin was completely surrounded, and the next day 500,000 Red Army troops swarmed into the city itself. The battle for the city was savage, and the Waffen-SS took part in

Above: Waffen-SS soldiers fighting in Austria in March 1945. Both the* Hohenstaufen *and* Totenkopf *Divisions fought in the defence of Vienna in April, but were unable to prevent the city falling to the Russians on the 13th.

this last battle. On 28 April, the Soviets broke through the inner city defences and stormed towards the Reichstag. As usual, the SS fought with great courage. The battered buildings had been turned into a fortress, with heavy machine guns and artillery emplaced behind makeshift gun ports.

The SS Begleit-Kommando was the unit charged with Hitler's protection, and it was the SS who had the task of disposing of the Führer's remains. In the closing days of the war, Hitler had informed SS-Sturmbannführer Otto Günsche that he and Eva Braun were going to commit suicide. Furthermore, he was to be sure that he burned their bodies so that they did not fall into Russian hands. 'I don't want to be put on display in some Russian wax-works'. he informed Günsche.

Hitler committed suicide on 30 April 1945, and Günsche was the first person to see his body. He ordered SS-Sturmbannführer Erich Kempka to forage for the fuel necessary to incinerate the corpses. Eva Braun was laid next to Hitler and the corpses ignited by Bormann in a Viking-funeral pyre, in accordance with Hitler's last orders. SS-Oberführer

Wilhelm Mohnke wept openly when Hitler committed suicide, and he set fire to the bunker on the following day, 1 May. He joined one of the escape groups on that night, only to be captured later by the Russians while hiding in a cellar in the Schönhauser Allee.

The first Soviet assault on the Reichstag on 30 April was supported by artillery and Katyusha rocket launchers. Three battalions of infantry charged forward in the face of heavy fire and managed to breach the defences. Inside the building, the fighting degenerated into hand-to-hand combat. The SS had turned the cellar into a fortress, and it took two days of heavy fighting before they were defeated. Some 2500 of the Reichstag's defenders were killed, with another 2600 taken prisoner. By that time Hitler was dead and the battle for Berlin was over. At 1500 hours on 2 May, Lieutenant-General Weidling surrendered the city to the Russians. There were still groups of Waffen-SS troops fighting in various pockets of the shrinking Reich, and they continued to fight until all the formal surrender negotiations had been completed.

Above: The remains of a German town near Berlin, April 1945. By this stage of the war the élite divisions of the Waffen-SS were shadows of their former selves, but they continued to put up a spirited fight.

Right: Volkssturm ('Home Guard') recruits receive instruction in the use of the MG 42 machine gun in Berlin, April 1945. Such measures were wholly inadequate to resist the might of the advancing Red Army.

The price the Waffen-SS paid in the East is illustrated by how it soldiers entered captivity. Their mode of surrender was not one of subjugation, but pride in their position as Hitler's élite. The 2nd SS Panzer Division *Das Reich*, in the last days of the war, was able to retreat to the west and into American captivity. The 3rd

Above: Volkssturm learn how to use the Panzerschreck anti-tank weapon in Berlin in the last days of the war. Up until the end Himmler's Escort Battalion scoured the city's streets, hanging deserters and 'shirkers'.

SS Panzer Division *Totenkopf* had withdrawn to the northwest of Vienna and surrendered to the Americans on 9 May. But its members were then handed over to the Russians, and few of the Waffen-SS soldiers survived Russian captivity. The 4th *SS-Polizei* Panzergrenadier Division, after a brief rest southwest of Stettin, fought its way from an area north of Berlin, across the Elbe to Wittenberge-Lenzen and into American captivity.

Having fought a defensive action from Stuhlweissenburg west of Budapest back into Czechoslovakia, the men of the 5th SS Panzer Division *Wiking* were released from their oaths by the commander, SS-Oberführer Ullrich. He gave his officers the choice of remaining with the men, or of striking out for home. Such was the unit's discipline that it surrendered to the Americans whole on 13 May.

The pathetic remnants of the 9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* surrendered to the Americans at Seyr in Austria, as did the *Leibstandarte* Division. The 10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg* was under the 4th Armoured Army, Army Group Centre, in May, fighting near Cottbus and farther south in Saxony. The division moved to the Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia under Army Group Centre, and entered Russian captivity at Schönau. The 12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend* managed to surrender to the Americans on 8 May, it they crossed the

demarcation line near the town of Enns, south-east of Linz, and entered American captivity. Just before crossing the demarcation line, and at less than 1.6km (one mile) from it, SS-Brigadeführer und Generalmajor der Waffen-SS Hugo Kraas inspected the remnants of his division in one last review. Only 455 men and one tank were all that remained of what had been one of German's foremost armoured divisions. Proud and stubborn even in defeat, they had refused to comply with the American order that their vehicles should be draped with white flags as a token of surrender.

The end of the supermen

The 11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland* was smashed in the Battle of Berlin. The 14th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (ukrainische No 1) from the Ukraine surrendered to the Soviets in Czechoslovakia, and the bulk of its surviving personnel were promptly shot. Part of the 15th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (lettische No 1) from Latvia participated in the defence of Berlin. The 16th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Reichsführer-SS* withdrew into Untersteiermark in the south of Austria, but became fragmented. Some units of the 16th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Reichsführer-SS* surrendered south of the River Drau, while others withdrew towards Klagenfurt and surrendered to the Americans and British.

The 22nd Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division der SS *Maria Theresia*, which was predominantly Hungarian, was destroyed in the fighting for Budapest. The Red Army also overran the predominantly Hungarian volunteer 25th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (ungarische No 1) *Hunyadi* and 26th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (ungarische No 2) *Hungaria*, while they were still forming. The 34th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS *Landstorm Nederland*, little more than a regiment, was wiped out in the fall of Berlin, and the motley remnants of both the 27th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division (flämische No 1) *Langemarck* and the 28th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Wallonien* were also wiped out during the fighting for the Reich's capital, as were the remaining volunteers of the French 33rd Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (französische No 1) *Charlemagne*.

On the day after the capitulation, 13 French volunteers were shot without the benefit of a court martial near Bad Reichenhall. The order for the execution was given by the French General Leclerc, commander of the French 2nd Armoured Division, despite the fact that these French volunteers were wearing German uniform. They had only been deployed in their units in the East, and had surrendered to the Americans on the day of capitulation. These unfortunate volunteers were then handed over by the US Army to the support Leclerc Division. The general took a personal interest in these French prisoners of war and asked them, 'why are you wearing these German uniforms?' One prisoner replied, 'General, why are you wearing an American uniform?', and that was enough to sign their death warrants.

The final reckoning

The Waffen-SS had failed to bring the Führer victory, but it had fought with courage and tenacity throughout, although it is impossible to neglect the appalling atrocities committed in Russia. The actions of Waffen-SS soldiers without doubt lengthened the war in the East, but by how much is very hard to quantify. Possibly their tenacity gave a false sense of security not only to Hitler and Himmler, but also to the German High Command. Without them, the attempts to sue for peace by the officer corps might have been prosecuted more diligently, and the attempt on Hitler's life on 20 July 1944 might well have born greater fruits, but in the event, it gave greater control to the SS. The terrible loss of life both on the battlefield and in the extermination camps might well have been alleviated somewhat.

The Waffen-SS was an organisation that had fought in a manner never encountered before. And was to lay the foundation for the integrated NATO defences after the war. But if its military exploits were exemplary, its ideological beliefs still leave a bad taste in the mouth.

1st SS Panzer Division *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 1
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 2
SS-Panzer Regiment 1
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment

2nd SS Panzer Division *Das Reich*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 3 *Deutschland*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 4 *Der Führer*
SS-Panzer Regiment 2
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 2

3rd SS Panzer Division *Totenkopf*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 5 *Thule*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 6 *Theodor Eicke*
SS-Panzer Regiment 3
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 3

4th SS Panzergrenadier Division *SS-Polizei*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 7
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 8
SS-Artillerie Regiment 4
SS-Sturmgeschutz Abteilung 4

5th SS Panzer Division *Wiking*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 9 *Germania*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 10 *Westland*
SS-Panzer Regiment 5
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 5

6th SS Gebirgs Division *Nord*
SS-Gebirgsjäger Regiment 11 *Reinhard Heydrich*
SS-Gebirgsjäger Regiment 12 *Michael Gaissmair*
SS-Gebirgs Artillerie Regiment 6
SS-Sturmgeschutz Batterie 6

7th SS Freiwilligen-Gebirgs Division *Prinz Eugen*
SS-Freiwilligen Gebirgsjäger Regiment 13 *Artur Phleps*
SS-Freiwilligen Gebirgsjäger Regiment 14 *Skanderbeg*
SS-Freiwilligen Gebirgs Artillerie Regiment 7
SS-Sturmgeschutz Abteilung 7

8th SS Kavallerie Division *Florian Geyer*
SS-Kavallerie Regiment 15
SS-Kavallerie Regiment 16
SS-Kavallerie Regiment 18
SS-Artillerie Regiment (mot) 8
SS-Panzerjäger Abteilung 8

9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 19
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 20
SS-Panzer Regiment 9
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 9

10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 21
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 22
SS-Panzer Regiment 10
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 10

11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 23 *Norge*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 24 *Danmark*
SS-Panzer Abteilung 11 *Hermann von Salza*
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 11

12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 25
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 26
SS-Panzer Regiment 12
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 12

13th Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS (kroatische Nr 1) *Handschar*
SS-Waffen Gebirgsjäger Regiment 27
SS-Waffen Gebirgsjäger Regiment 28
SS-Waffen Artillerie Regiment 13
SS-Panzerjäger Abteilung 13

14th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (ukrainische Nr 1)
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 29
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 30
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 31
Waffen-Artillerie Regiment der SS 14

15th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS (lettische Nr 1)
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 32
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 33
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 34
Waffen-Artillerie Regiment der SS 15

16th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Reichsführer-SS*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 35
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 36
SS-Artillerie Regiment16
SS-Panzer Abteilung 16

17th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Götz von Berlichingen*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 37
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 38
SS-Panzer Artillerie Regiment 17
SS-Panzerjäger Abteilung 17

18th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Horst Wessel*
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 39
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 40
SS-Artillerie Regiment 18
SS-Panzerjäger Abteilung 18

19TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (LETTISCHES NR 2)
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 42 Voldemars Veiss
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 43 Heinrich Schuldt
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 44
Waffen-Artillerie Regiment 19

20TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (ESTNISCHE NR 1)
Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 45
Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 46
Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 47
Waffen-Artillerie Regiment 20

21ST WAFFEN-GEBIRGS DIVISION DER SS (ALBANISCHE NR 1) *SKANDERBEG*
Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS 50
Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS 51
Waffen-Gebirgs Artillerie Regiment 21

22ND FREIWILLIGEN-KAVALLREIE DIVISION DER SS *MARIA THERESIA*
Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Regiment der SS 52
Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Regiment der SS 53
Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Regiment der SS 54
Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Regiment der SS 55

23RD WAFFEN-GEBIRGS DIVISION DER SS *KAMA*
Waffen-Gebirgsjäger Regiment der SS 56
Waffen-Gebirgsjäger Regiment der SS 57
Waffen-Gebirgsjäger Regiment der SS 58
Waffen-Gebirgs Artillerie Regiment der SS 23

23RD FREIWILLIGEN-PANZERGRENADIER DIVISION *NEDERLAND*
SS-Freiwilligen Panzergrenadier Regiment 48 *General Seyffardt*
SS-Freiwilligen Panzergrenadier Regiment 49 *De Ruiter*

24TH WAFFEN-GEBIRGS DIVISION DER SS *KARSTJÄGER*
Waffen-Gebirgsjäger Regiment der SS 59
Waffen-Gebirgsjäger Regiment der SS 60
Waffen-Gebirgs Artillerie Regiment 24

25TH WAFFEN-GRENADIERDIVISION DER SS (UNGARISCHE NR 1) *HUNYADI*
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 61
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 62
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 63
Waffen-Artillerie Regiment der SS 25

26TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (UNGARISCHE NR 2) *HUNGARIA*
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 64
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 65
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 66
SS-Panzer Bataillon 26

27TH SS FREIWILLIGEN-PANZERGRENADIER DIVISION (FLÄMISCHE NR 1) *LANGEMARCK*

28TH SS FREIWILLIGEN-PANZERGRENADIER DIVISION *WALLONIEN*

29TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (RUSSISCHE NR 1)

29TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (ITALIENISCHE NR 1)
SS-Füsilier Bataillon *Debica*
SS-Füsilier Bataillon *Vendetta*

30TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (WEISSRUTHENISCHE NR 1)
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 75
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 76
Waffen-Grenadier Regiment der SS 77
Waffen-Artillerie Regiment der SS 30

31ST SS-FREIWILLIGEN GRENADIER DIVISION
SS-Freiwilligen Grenadier Regiment 78
SS-Freiwilligen Grenadier Regiment 79
SS-Freiwilligen Grenadier Regiment 80
SS-Artillerie Regiment 31

32ND SS FREIWILLIGEN GRENADIER DIVISION *30 JANUAR*

33RD WAFFEN-KAVALLREIE DIVISION DER SS (UNGARISCHE NR 3)

33RD WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS (FRANZÖSISCHE NR 1) *CHARLEMAGNE*

34TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS *LANDSTORM NEDERLAND*
SS-Freiwilligen Grenadier Regiment 83
SS-Freiwilligen Grenadier Regiment 84

35TH SS POLIZEI GRENADIER DIVISION

36TH WAFFEN-GRENADIER DIVISION DER SS

37TH SS FREIWILLIGEN-KAVALLREIE DIVISION *LÜTZOW*

38th SS Grenadier Division *NIBELUNGEN*

Note: The theoretical strength of a Waffen-SS division was around 19,000 men, though those units raised during the latter stages of the war never approached this level of manpower. By the time war ended in May 1945, the majority of the Waffen-SS foreign volunteer units had been disbanded or amalgamated with newly formed divisions in the order of battle listed above. In addition to this list, there were a number of minscule units which had been raised by the SS, such as the Indian Legion. However, these units were militarily useless.

COMMANDERS OF EUROPEAN UNITS AND EUROPEAN VOLUNTEERS DECORATED WITH THE KNIGHT'S CROSS OF THE IRON CROSS ON THE EASTERN FRONT

The dates listed indicate the time of the award of the Knight's Cross. Where applicable, awards for higher degrees of the Knight's Cross – Oakleaves, Oakleaves with Swords, and Diamonds – are also listed, with the specific award in brackets, together with the recipient's position in the league table pertaining to the award of that specific higher classification of the Knight's Cross. Ranks of recipients are also given.

III (Germanic) SS Panzer Corps

Steiner, Felix	10.8.44 (Swords, 86th) SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS 23.12.1942 (Oakleaves, 159th) 15.8.1940 (Knight's Cross)

V SS Mountain Corps

Phleps, Artur	24.11.44 (Oakleaves, 670th) SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS 4.7.43 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)

VI Waffen Army Corps of the SS (Latvian)

Krueger, Walter	1.2.45 (Swords, 120th) SS-Obergruppenführer and General of the Waffen-SS 31.8.43 (Oakleaves, 286th) 13.12.1941 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)

IX Waffen Mountain Corps of the SS (Croatian)

Pfeffer-Wildenbruch, Karl	4.2.45 (Oakleaves, 723rd) SS-Obergruppenführer and General of the Waffen-SS 11.1.45 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)

Corps Pioneer Commander III (Germanic) SS Panzer Corps

Schaefer, Max	25.1.45 (Oakleaves, 714th) SS-Standartenführer 22.2.43 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)

7th SS Freiwilligen-Gebirgs Division *Prinz Eugen*

Dietsche, Bernhard	17.7.43 SS-Sturmbannführer
Krombholz, Franz	28.3.45 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Kumm, Otto	4.4.45 (Swords, 138th) SS-Brigadeführer and Major-General of the Waffen-SS 6.4.43 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Neumann, Eggert	3.11.44 SS-Sturmbannführer
Paletta, Harry	26.11.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Petersen, Heinrich	13.11.43 SS-Obersturmbannführer

11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland*

Bunse, Fritz	30.1.44 SS-Sturmbannführer
Christophersen, Egon	11.7.44 SS-Unterscharführer
Fischer, Alred	9.5.45 SS-Sturmbannführer
Gieseler, Karl-Heinz	29.4.45 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Guerz, Martin	23.10.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Haemel, Heinz	16.6.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Hektor, Albert	23.8.44 SS-Oberscharführer
Hund, Willi	20.4.45 SS-Obersturmführer
Kam, Soeren	7.2.45 SS-Untersturmführer
Karl, Friedrich-Wilhelm	26.12.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Kausch, Paul-Albert	23.8.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Knöchlein, Fritz	16.11.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Kruegel, Albrecht	12.3.44 SS-Sturmbannführer
Langendorf, Georg	12.3.44 SS-Untersturmführer
Luengen, Siegfried	16.11.44 SS-Hauptscharführer
Potschka, Herman	26.12.44 SS-Sturmbannführer
Rott, Rudolf	28.2.45 SS-Obersturmführer
Saalbach, Rudolf	12.3.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Scholz, Fritz	SS-Gruppenführer and Lieutenant-General of the Waffen-SS 8.8.44 (Swords, 85th) 12.3.44 (Oakleaves, 423rd) 18.1.42 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Seebach, Walter	12.3.44 SS-Obersturmführer
Sporck, Kaspar	23.10.44 SS-Unterschführer
Spoerle, Richard	16.11.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Schulz-Streeck, Karl-Heinz	2.5.45 SS-Sturmbannführer
Stoffers, Arnold	12.3.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Vogt, Fritz	16.3.45 (Oakleaves, 785th) SS-Hauptsturmführer 4. 9.44 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Wild ,Philipp	21.3.44 SS-Oberscharführer
Ziegler, Joachim	28.4.45 (Oakleaves, 848th) SS-Brigadeführer

13th Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS *Handschar*

Hampel, Desiderius	3.5.45 SS-Standartenführer
Kinz, Hemlut	3.5.45 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Liecke, Karl	3.5.45 SS-Sturmbannführer and Major of the Police
Stenwedel, Albert	3.5.45 SS-Sturmbannführer

14th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS

Freitag, Fritz	30.9.44 SS-Brigadeführer and Major-General of the Waffen-SS

15th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS

Aperats, Karlis	21.9.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Ax, Adolf	9.5.45 SS-Oberführer
Heilmann, Nikolaus	13.8.44 SS-Oberführer
Sensberg, Karlis	9.5.44 SS-Unterscharführer

19th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS

Adamsons, Mervaldis	25.4.34 SS-Untersturmführer
Ancans, Robert	25.1.45 SS-Untersturmführer
Ansons, Zanis	25.1.45 SS-Hauptscharführer
Butkus, Zanis	21.9.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Gaigals, Roberts	5.5.45 SS-Obersturmführer
Galdins, Nikolajs	25.1.45 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Reinholds, Voldemar	9.5.45 SS-Sturmbannführer
Riekstins, Alfreds	5.4.45 SS-Unterscharführer
Schuldt, Hinrich	25.3.44 (Swords, 56th) SS-Brigadeführer and Major-General of the Waffen-SS 2.4.43 (Oakleaves, 220th) 5.4.42 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Streckenbach, Bruno	21.1.45 (Oakleaves, 701st) SS-Gruppenführer and Lieutenant-General of the Police 27.8.44 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Veiss, Voldemars	9.2.44 SS-Standartenführer

20th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS

Augsberger, Franz	31.3.45 SS-Brigadeführer and Major-General of the Waffen-SS
Langhorst, Bernhard	5.4.45 SS-Sturmbannführer
Maitla, Paul	23.8.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Nugiseks, Harald	9. 4.44 SS-Unterscharführer
Rebane, Alfons	9.5.45 (Oakleaves, 875th) SS-Standartenführer 23.2.44 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Riipalu, Harald	23.8.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer

SS Volunteer Panzegrenadier Battalion *Narwa*, 5th SS Panzer Division *Wiking*

Eberhardt, Georg	4.8.43 SS-Sturmbannführer

22nd SS Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division der SS *Maria Theresia*

Ameiser, Anton	1.11.44 SS-Sturmbannführer
Vandieken, Anton	26.12.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Zehender, August	4.2.45 (Oakleaves, 722nd) SS-Brigadeführer and Major-General of the Waffen-SS

SS Volunteer Legion *Nederland*

Mooyman, Gerardes	20.2.43 SS-Sturmmann

23rd SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nederland*

Behler, Clemens	17.3.45 SS-Obersturmführer
Bruins, Derk-Elsko	23.8.44 SS-Rottenführer
Collani, Hans	19.8.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Ertel, Karl-Heinz	23.8.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Frühauf, Carl-Heinz	4.6.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Hellmers, Johannes	5.3.45 SS-Obersturmführer
Hofer, Lothar	5.4.45 SS-Sturmbannführer and Major of the Police
Jenschke, Walter	18.12.44 Gunner
Joerchel, Wolfgang	21.4.44 SS-Obersturmbannführer
Lohmann, Hanns-Heinrich	9.5.45 (Oakleaves, 872nd) SS-Obersturmbannführer 12.3.44 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Meyer, Hans	2.9.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Petersen, Otto	11.12.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Ruehle, von Lilienstern Hans-J.	2.2.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Rieth, Herbert-Albert	11.12.44 SS-Untersturmführer
Scheibe, Siegfried	9.5.45 SS-Sturmbannführer
Schlueter, Wilhelm	23.8.44 SS-Sturmbannführer and Major of the Police
Schluifelder, Georg	26.11.44 SS-Standartenoberjunker
Scholz, Helmut	24.9.44 (Oakleaves, 591st) SS-Obersturmführer 4.6.44 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Strapatin, Stefan	16.11.44 SS-Rottenführer
Wanhoefer, Günter	27.8.44 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Wagner, Jürgen	29.12.44 (Oakleaves, 680th) SS-Brigadeführer and Major-General of the Waffen-SS 24.7.43 Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)

27th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Langemarck*

Schellong, Conrad	28.2.45 SS-Sturmbannführer
Schrynen, Remi	21.9.44 SS-Sturmmann

28th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Wallonien*

Degrelle, Léon	27.8.44 SS-Sturmbannführer (Oakleaves) 20.2.44 (Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross)
Gillis, Leon	30.9.44 SS-Untersturmführer
Leroy, Jaques	20.4.45 SS-Untersturmführer

33rd Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS *Charlemagne*

Fenet, Henri-Joseph	29.4.45 SS-Hauptsturmführer
Vaulot, Eugène	29.4.45 SS-Unterscharführer

WAFFEN-SS RANKS AND THEIR ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

SS-Schüte	Private
SS-Oberschütze	Senior Private, attained after six months' service
SS-Sturmmann	Lance-Corporal
SS-Rottenführer	Corporal
SS-Unterscharführer	Senior Corporal/ Lance-Sergeant
SS-Scharführer	Sergeant
SS-Oberscharführer	Staff Sergeant
SS-Hauptscharführer	Warrant Officer
SS-Sturmscharführer	Senior Warrant Officer after 15 years' service
SS-Untersturmführer	Second Lieutenant
SS-Obersturmführer	First Lieutenant
SS-Hauptsturmführer	Captain
SS-Sturmbannführer	Major
SS-Oberbannsturmführer	Lieutenant-Colonel
SS-Standartenführer	Colonel
SS-Oberführer	Senior Colonel
SS-Brigadeführer und Generalmajor der Waffen-SS	Major-General
SS-Gruppenführer und Generalleutnant der Waffen-SS	Lieutenant-General
SS-Obergruppenführer und General der Waffen-SS	General
SS-Oberstgruppenführer und Generaloberst der Waffen-SS	Colonel-General
Reichsführer-SS	(no English equivalent)

WAFFEN-SS RANKS OF OFFICER CANDIDATES

Early 1940	SS-Junker
	SS-Standartenjunker
	SS-Standartenoberjunker
From July 1943	Führer-Bewerber
	SS-Junker
	SS-Standartenjunker
	SS-Standartenoberjunker

WAFFEN-SS RANKS OF NCO CANDIDATES

SS-Unterführer-Anwärter Signed for 12 years' service
SS-Unterführer-Bewerber Signed for less than 12 years' service

Titles of lower ranks were affected by the type of unit the soldier was assigned to. Also, in two further special circumstances the prefix 'SS' before the rank title was substituted by the word 'Legion', abbreviated to 'Leg.' or 'Waffen'. Rank titles for men serving in foreign legions were amended to Leg.-Schütze, Leg.-Sturmman and so on. Divisions made up primarily of non-Germanic volunteers or conscripts, designated 'Waffen-SS Division der SS', had their rank title changed, i.e. Waffen-Oberbannsturmführer der SS, Waffen-Standartenführer der SS. The following table is a list of the rank titles for privates and senior privates in specific types of unit. The first column is the unit type, the second the title of a private in that unit and the third the title of a senior private in that unit. The title for ranks above senior private are given on the page opposite.

SS-Panzer-Regiment	SS-Panzerschütze	SS-Panzeroberschütze
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment	SS-Panzergrenadier	SS-Panzerobergrenadier
SS-Grenadier Regiment	SS-Grenadier	SS-Obergrenadier
SS-Gebirgs-Jäger-Regiment	SS-Jäger	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Reiter-Regiment	SS-Reiter	SS-Oberreiter
SS-Artillery-Regiment	SS-Kanonier	SS-Oberkanonier
SS-Gebirgs-Artillery-Regiment	SS-Kanonier	SS-Oberkanonier
SS-Sturmgesch.-Einheit	SS-Kanonier	SS-Oberkanonier
SS-Panzer-Jäger-Einheit	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Kradschutzen.-Einheit	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Panzer-Späh.-Einheit	SS-Panzerschütze	SS-Panzeroberschütze
SS-Flak-Einheit	SS-Kanonier	SS-Oberkanonier
SS-Pionier-Einheit	SS-Pionier	SS-Oberpionier
SS-Nachrichten-Einheit	SS-Funker	SS-Obefunker
SS-Werfer-Einheit	SS-Kanonier	SS-Oberkanonier
SS-Radfahr-Einheit	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Nachschub-Einheit (Besp.)	SS-Fahrer	SS-Oberfahrer
SS-Nachschub-Einheit (Mot.)	SS-Kraftfahrer	SS-Oberkraftfahrer
SS-Sanitäts-Einheit	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Veterinär-Einheit	SS-Reiter	SS-Oberreiter
SS-Werkstatt-Einheit	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Feldgend.-Einheit	SS-Feldgendarm	
SS-Karstwehr-Bataillon	SS-Jäger	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Wehrgeologen-Bataillon	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Kriegsberichter Abteilung	SS-Schütze	SS-Oberschütze
SS-Jäger-Bataillon 502	SS-Bewährungsschütze	

INDEX

Page numbers in *italics* denote photographs

Alexandrovka 37
Alexeyevka 59
Allgemeine-SS 9, 11, 15, 87, 90, 91, 93
Amber Room, looting of 122
Amery, John 96

Bach-Zelewski, SS-Obergruppenführer Erich von dem 109, 110, *111*, 122, 127, 129, 162, 168
Bad Tölz, SS officer training school at *14*
Baum, SS-Obersturmbannführer Otto 64
Behrends, SS-Gruppenführer Dr Hermann 22
Belgorod 57, 68, 75, 81, 101, 102
Berchtold, Josef 7
Berger, Gottlob 117, 118
Bialystok 154
Bittrich, SS-Brigadeführer Willi 141
Blaskowitz, Colonel-General 118
Bobry 29
Bock, Field Marshal Fedor von 23
Breith, General 71
Bremer, SS-Obersturmführer Gerd 66
Brockdorff-Ahlefeldt, General Graf 45, 54
Brunswick, SS officer training school at 17
Bryansk Forest, partisan operations in 114–116, 127
Buchenwald, concentration camp at 16
Budyenni, Marshal 24
Busch, General 31
Busse, General Theodor 178

Cherson 29
Christen, SS-Unterscharführer Fritz 38, 39
Clausen, Frits 87
Communist Party Central Committee 111

Dagda 31
Darré, Walther 14
Degrelle, SS-Standartenführer Léon 88, 95, 139, 140
Demyansk Pocket 43–47, 54
Devlag 89, 90
Diels, Rudolf 9
Dietrich, SS-Oberstgruppenführer Josef 'Sepp' 12, *57*, 173, 174, 175
Dinaso 88, 89
Dirlewanger, SS-Oberführer Oskar *162*
Dnepropetrovsk 29, 62
Dvinsk 31

Eicke, SS-Obergruppenführer Theodor 7, 11, *12*, 15, 16, 19, 31, 33, 38, 43, 45, 46, 47, 53, 54, 62, 64, 106, 118
Einsatzgruppen 19, 109, 116, 117, 118, 119, 121, 122, 124, 127

Falkenhorst, Colonel-General von 23
Feldmeyer, J. Hendrik 87
Forster, Albert 117
Freikorps 8
Freissner, General 71

German Army formations:
  Armies:
    1st Panzer Army 102, 138, 141
    2nd Army 41, 153, 156, 173
    2nd Panzer Army 127
    4th Army 39, 153
    4th Panzer Army 62, 64, 69, 74, 102, 137, 141
    6th Army 24, 41, 55, 141
    8th Army 102, 118, 141
    9th Army 39, 69, 71, 156
    11th Army 24
    11th Panzer Army 178
    14th Army 118
    16th Army 31, 43, 44
    17th Army 24, 41
    18th Army 31
  Army Groups:
    Army Group Centre 23, 39, 43, 69, 71, 74, 101, 116, 153, 169
    Army Group E 171
    Army Group F 171
    Army Group North 23, 31, 43, 125
    Army Group South 23, 24, 27, 28, 69, 71, 100, 103, 134, 140, 141
    Army Group Southeast 173
  Brigades:
    10 Panzer Brigade 74
  Corps:
    II Corps 43, 44, 46
    III Panzer Corps 25, 29, 35, 36, 71, 79, 80, 101
    X Corps 43, 44
    XI Corps 71
    XIV Panzer Corps 35, 37
    XXIII Corps 71
    XXIV Panzer Corps 40, 138
    XXXVIII Corps 27
    XXXIX Panzer Corps 157
    XXXXI Panzer Corps 31
    XLI Panzer Corps 71
    XLII Corps 71
    XLVI Panzer Corps 39, 42
    XLVII Panzer Corps 71
    XLVIII Panzer Corps 62, 71, 74, 137, 141
    LII Corps 71
    LVI Corps 30
    LVI Panzer Corps 31, 32, 33
  Divisions:
    1st Mountain Division 28
    3rd Motorised Division 32
    3rd Panzer Division 71, 74
    5th Light Division 46
    6th Infantry Division 73
    6th Panzer Division 71
    7th Panzer Division 71, 102
    8th Light Division 46, 53
    8th Panzer Division 32
    9th Panzer Division 104
    10th Panzer Division 40, 41, 42
    11th Panzer Division 71, 74, 104, 138
    13th Panzer Division 138
    14th Panzer Division 37
    16th Panzer Division 37, 81
    16th Panzergrenadier Division 104
    18th Motorised Division 44
    19th Panzer Division 71, 163, 166
    20th Panzer Division 73
    23rd Panzer Division 81
    25th Panzer Division 165
    30th Infantry Division 39
    39th Infantry Division 71
    57th Infantry Division 71
    73rd Infantry Division 157, 159
    106th Infantry Division 71
    122nd Infantry Division 46
    127th Infantry Division 46
    161st Infantry Division 71
    167th Infantry Division 71, 75
    168th Infantry Division 71
    170th Infantry Division 56
    255th Infantry Division 71
    269th Infantry Division 71
    282nd Infantry Division 71
    320th Infantry Division 57, 71
    329th Infantry Division 46
    332nd Infantry Division 71
    Grossdeutschland Division 68, 71, 74
  Panzer Groups:
    1st Panzer Group 23, 24, 25, 26, 29, 31, 41
    2nd Panzer Group 23, 39, 40, 41
    3rd Panzer Group 39
    4th Panzer Group 23, 31
    Panzer Group *Kempf* 69, 71
  Regiments:
    Grossdeutschland Regiment 23, 39
    Hermann Göring Regiment 29
Gestapa 9
Gestapo 9, 11, 111
Gille, SS-Obergruppenführer Herbert Otto 139
Göbbels, Josef Paul 11
Göring, Hermann 11, 45
Gross, SS-Sturmbannführer Martin 78
Guderian, General Heinz 23, 39, 68, 156

Hausser, SS-Oberstgruppenführer Paul 17, *55*, 56, 58, 61, 71, 79
Heydrich, SS-Obergruppenführer Reinhard 11, *13*, 22, 116, 117, 121
Himmler, Reichsführer-SS Heinrich *7*, 8, 9, 11, 14, 15, 16, 19, 36, 83, *84*, 87, 90, 94, 116, 118, 122, 125, 183
Hitler, Adolf *7*, 8, 9, 11, 17, 19, 21, 27, 30, 43, 44, 52, 53, 54, 61, 62, 70, 85, 116, 174, 183
Höppner, General Erich 23, 31
Hoth, General Hermann 62, 71, 74

Jeckeln, SS-Obergruppenführer Friedrich 125

Kaminiski, Waffen-Brigadeführer Bronislav 127, *129*
Keitel, Field Marshal Wilhelm 69
Kempf, General 27, 71, 134
Keppler, SS-Brigadeführer Georg 33
Kharkov 24, 56–59, 61, 62, 64, *65*, 68
Kiev 23, 27, 41, 102
Kirponos, General 24
Kleist, General Edwald von 23
Klevan 25
Kluge, Field Marshal Günther von 71
Knobelsdorf, General von 71
Konev, Marshal 70
Kopino 56, 106
Korsun 29
Kowel 24
Kraas, SS-Oberführer Hugo 173, 183
Krasovski, Air Marshal 70
Kripo 111
Krivoi Rog 104
Küchler, Colonel-General 31, 44
Kumm, SS-Brigadeführer Otto 173, 175

Lake Ladoga 56
Lake Seliger 43
Lammerding, SS-Oberführer Heinz 140, 141
Leeb, Field Marshal Ritter von 23, 31, 44
Lemelsen, General 71
Leningrad 31
Lie, Jonas 92
Lipert, Lucien 139
Liptsy 65
Lohse, Heinrich 125
Luga Line 32
Lushno 38, 39

Mackensen, General von 25, 36
Malinovsky, General 81
Manstein, Field Marshal Erich von 31, 33, 61, 68, 70, 80, 81, 102, 134, 140
Mattenklott, General 71
Mellenthin, General Joachim von 70
Merefa 57, 58
Meyer, SS-Obersturmbannführer Kurt 26, *29*, 57, 58, 65–67,
Minsk 39
Model, Field Marshal Walter 71
Mooyman, SS-Untersturmführer Geradus 100, *101*
Moscow 41, 42, 43, 68
Munich Putsch 8, 12, 18
Munk, SS-Standartenoberjunker Jan 134, *137*
Mussert, Anton *84*, 87, 88
Mussolini, Benito 100

National Unity Movement 85
Naujocks, SS-Sturmbannführer Alfred 22
Nazi Party 8
Nebe, SS-Gruppenführer 121, 122, 131
'Night of the Long Knives' 11
NKVD 22
Norgess-SS 92, 93
Nugiseks, Waffen-Unterscharführer 144

Oboyan 74, 78
Ohlendorf, SS-Gruppenführer 121
Ordnungspolizei 122
Orel 101
Ott, General 71

Pancke, SS-Gruppenführer 118
Pavlograd 62
Peiper, SS-Sturmbannführer Joachim 68
Pétain, Marshal Philippe 85
Poltava 102
Pripet Marshes 25, 41
Prokhorovka 75, 79, 80

Quisling, Vidkum 85, 87, 92, 93

Rasch, SS-Oberführer 121
Rastenburg, Hitler's HQ at 52
Raus, General 71
'Red Front Fighters' Association' 8
Reich Central Security Department 111, 116
Reichstag 9
Reichswehr 13, 17, 18
Rexist Party 90, 91
Ribbentrop, SS-Obergruppenführer Joachim von 122
Ribbentrop, SS-Obersturmführer Rudolf von 58
Röhm, Ernst 7, 9, 12
Rokossovsky, General 70
Rollbahn 25
Rosenov 31
Rostov *36*, *37*
Rudenko, Air Marshal 70
Rumohr, SS-Brigadeführer Joachim 173
Rundstedt, Field Marshal Gerd von 23

Schellenberg, Walter 116
Schreck, Julius 8
Schrynen, SS-Unterscharführer Remy 143, 144, *145*
Severen, Joris van 88
Seydlitz-Kurzbach, Lieutenant-General Walter von 46, 47
Seyss-Inquart, Arthur 87, 100
Sicherheitsdienst 11, 13, 121
Sicherheitspolizei 116
Simon, SS-Oberführer Max 45, *46*, 52, 53
Smolensk 39, 43
Soviet formations:
  Air Armies:
    2nd Air Army 70
    16th Air Army 70
  Armies:
    1st Shock Army 43, 44
    2nd Guards Tank Army 56
    2nd Tank Army 157
    3rd Guards Tank Army 178
    4th Guards Army 173, 175
    4th Guards Tank Army 178
    5th Guards Tank Army 75, 79, 133
    6th Army 62
    6th Guards Army 75
    6th Guards Tank Army 173
    9th Army 37
    11th Army 43, 44, 53
    13th Army 72
    16th Shock Army 43
    26th Army 173
    34th Army 32, 43, 45
    37th Army 37
    46th Army 175
    53rd Army 133
    57th Army 133, 173
    69th Army 74
  Brigades:
    1st Cavalry Brigade 166
    30th Rifle Brigade 53
    Kovpak Brigade 114
    Saburov Brigade 114
  Corps:
    I Guards Corps 53
    II Guards Tank Corps 75
    4th Breakthrough Artillery Corps 72
    VII Guards Cavalry Corps 58
    XV Cossack Cavalry Corps 96
    XXIII Guards Corps 80
    XXXI Guards Corps 80
  Divisions:
    7th Guards Division 53
    25th Guards Rifle Division 68
    32nd Infantry Division 28
    42nd Rifle Division 31
    52nd Guards Division 74
    129th Infantry Division 53
    130th Infantry Division 53
    229th Infantry Division 128
    364th Infantry Division 53
    391st Infantry Division 53
  Fronts:
    1st Baltic Front 168
    1st Belorussian Front 154, 155, 156, 169, 178
    1st Ukrainian Front 178
    2nd Baltic Front 169
    3rd Belorussian Front 154, 178
    3rd Ukrainian Front 173
    Central Front 70, 72, 73
    Steppe Front 73, 102
    Voronezh Front 70, 72, 73, 102
  Regiments:
    6th Infantry Regiment 166
    8th Infantry Regiment 166
    9th Infantry Regiment 166

Springer, SS-Hauptsturmführer Heinrich 36, *37*
SS-Totenkopfverbände 11, 13, 15, 16, 117
SS-Verfügungstruppe 17, 18, 19, 117
Stadler, SS-Oberführer Sylvester 173, 175
Stahlecker, SS-Gruppenführer 121
Stalin Line 28, 32

Stalino *27*
Staroverovka 64
Staudegger, SS-Oberscharführer Franz 78
Steiner, SS-Obergruppenführer Felix *15*, 17, 18, 143, 178
Stosstruppe Adolf Hitler 8, 12
Strang, Axel 92
Sturmabteilung 7, 8, 9

Taganrog 35
Tannenburg Line 147, 148
Treaty of Versailles 13, 17
Tukhachedsky, Marshal Mikhail 22

Uman Pocket 27, 28, 29

Vatutin, General 70, 75, 102
Vistula Line 156

Waffen-SS formations:
Armies:
6th SS Panzer Army 173, 174
Battle Groups:
Battle Group *Nordland* 23
Brigades:
3rd Estonian SS Volunteer Brigade 96
SS Volunteer Assault Brigade *Langemarck* 95, 143
SS Assault Brigade *Wallonien* 95, 138, 139, 143
SS-Verband *Druzhina* 128, 129
SS Freiwilligen-Brigade *Nederland* 143, 144, 169
Corps:
I SS Panzer Corps 56–59, 61, 62, 64, 173, 174
II SS Panzer Corps 71, 74, 75, 76, 79, 80, 100, 105, 138, 173, 174
III SS Panzer Corps 143, 146
IV SS Panzer Corps 163, 172, 174
Divisions:
1st SS Panzer Division *Leibstandarte SS Adolf Hitler* 12, 13, 14, 15, 18, 23, 24, 25, *26*, 27, 28, 29, 30, 35, 49, 55, *56*, 57, 58, *61*, 64, 65, 71, 73, 76, 77, 79, 80, 81, 100, 101, 105, 106, 133, 136, 138, 141, 173
2nd SS Panzer Division *Das Reich* 19, *25*, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 55, 57, 59, 62, 64, 67, 71, 73, *76*, 78, 81, 92, 100, 101, 102, 105, 133, 134, 138, 141, 173, 177, 180
3rd SS Panzer Division *Totenkopf* 19, 23, 31, 32, *33*, 38, 39, 43, 44, 45, 47, 49, *51*, 52, 53, 54, 55, 62, 65, 71, 73, 74, 75, 76, 79, 80, 81, 94, 101, 102, 105, 133, 141, 153, 163, 168, 173, 177, 182
4th SS Panzergrenadier Division *SS-Polizei* 19, 23, 24, 56, *104*, 106, 182
5th SS Panzer Division *Wiking* 19, 23, 28, 29, 35, 36, 56, *89*, 92, 95, 105, 133, 134, 138, 140, 141, *155*, *161*, 163, 173, 182
6th SS Gebirgs Division *Nord* 50
7th SS Freiwilligen-Gebirgs Division *Prinz Eugen* 50
8th SS Kavallerie Division *Florian Geyer* 50, 171, 173
9th SS Panzer Division *Hohenstaufen* 105, 141, 173, 177
10th SS Panzer Division *Frundsberg* 105, 141, 173, 178, 182
11th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Nordland* 96, 106, 143, 144, 146, 178, 183
12th SS Panzer Division *Hitlerjugend* 105, 173, 177, 182
13th Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS *Handschar* 96
14th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 96, 183
15th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 95, 106, 143, 183
16th SS Panzergrenadier Division *Reichsführer-SS* 141, 174, 183
18th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Horst Wessel* 50, 171, 174
19th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 95, 143
20th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 96, 106, 143, 147
21st Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS *Skanderbeg* 96
22nd Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division der SS *Maria Theresia* 171, 173, 183
23rd Waffen-Gebirgs Division der SS *Kama* 96
25th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS *Hunyadi* 96, 183
26th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS *Hungaria* 183
27th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Langemarck* 183
28th SS Freiwilligen-Panzergrenadier Division *Wallonien* 95, 183
29th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 96
30th Waffen-Grenadier Division der SS 96, 127
33rd Waffen-Grenadier der SS *Charlemagne* 95, 183
34th Waffen-Grenadier der SS *Landstorm Nederland* 183
37th SS Freiwilligen-Kavallerie Division *Lützow* 173
Freikorps:
Britische Freikorps 96, *97*
Freikorps *Danmark* 93, 94
Legions:
Freiwilligen Legion *Flandern* *91*, 95
Freiwilligen Legion *Niederlande* *86*
Freiwilligen Legion *Norwegen* *90*, 93
Indian Legion 96
Legion *Wallonie* 95
SS Volunteer Legion *Nederland* 100
Regiments:
1st SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 57
1 SS-Standarte *Flandern* 90
Brandenburg Regiment 16
Danmark Regiment 147
Der Führer Regiment 40, 42, 55, 58, 177
Deutschland Regiment 17, 40, 42
Freiwilligen Standarte *Nordwest* 95
General Seyffardt Regiment 146, 148
Germania Regiment 29, 30, 37, 92
Nordland Regiment 29, 30, 37, 91, 92, 95, 106
Norge Regiment 147
Oberbayern Regiment 16
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 2 65
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment 6 64
SS-Panzergrenadier Regiment *Nederland* 147
SS-Totenkopf Panzergrenadier Regiment 1 64
Thüringen Regiment 16
Westland Regiment 28, 29, 30, 35, 92, 94, 134
Wackerle, SS-Standartenführer Hilmar 28
Wirth, SS-Oberführer Christian 131
Wisch, SS-Standartenführer Theodor 65
Witt, SS-Brigadeführer Fritz 67
Wittmann, SS-Untersturmführer Michael 78
Wöhler, General Otto 102, 171
Wünsche, SS-Sturmbannführer Max 58

Yakovlevo 74
Yelnya 40

Zaporozhye 61
Zaselye 29
Zhitomir 26
Zhukov, Marshal Georgi 43, 178
Ziegler, SS-Brigadeführer Joachim 96
Zorn, General 71

Christopher Ailsby is a military historian whose main areas of interest are military awards, medals and decorations, antiques and the history of the Third Reich. He has written a number of books, including *SS: Roll of Infamy*, *Waffen-SS: The Unpublished Photographs* and *Waffen-SS: Hitler's Black Guard at War*.

PICTURE CREDITS
Front: (top) *Totenkopf* Tigers before the battle of Kursk; (bottom) SS Panzer Corps panzergrenadiers at Kursk, July 1943. (TRH Pictures)
Rear: *Das Reich* Tigers during the battle of Kursk. (TRH Pictures)

Editorial and design:
Amber Books Ltd
Bradley's Close
74–77 White Lion Street
London N1 9PF
www.amberbooks.co.uk

Also published by Spellmount Publishers:

Images of Kursk: History's Greatest Tank Battle, July 1943
BY NIK CORNISH

The Siege of Leningrad 1941–44: 900 Days of Terror
BY DAVID M GLANTZ

SS–Leibstandarte: The History of the First SS Division 1934–45
BY RUPERT BUTLER

SS-Totenkopf: The History of the 'Death's Head' Division 1940–45
BY DR CHRIS MANN

SS-Das Reich: The History of the Second SS Division 1941–45
BY GREGORY LOUIS MATTSON

SS–Wiking: The History of the Fifth SS Division 1941–45
BY RUPERT BUTLER

Telephone or write to Spellmount Publishers for a free catalogue 01580 893730

Published in Great Britain by
Spellmount Ltd
The Old Rectory
Staplehurst
Kent TN12 0AZ

e-mail: enquiries@spellmount.com
Website: www.spellmount.com

Printed in Italy

Describes the formation and growth of the *Waffen*-SS from Hitler's bodyguard to a fully-fledged combat arm, and its usage in Russia and Eastern Europe

Includes accounts of the *Waffen*-SS in action from the invasion of the Soviet Union in June 1941 to the fall of Berlin in May 1945

Featuring such infamous divisions as the *Leibstandarte* Adolf Hitler, *Das Reich*, *Totenkopf* and *Wiking*

Illustrated with rare combat black-and-white photographs of the *Waffen*-SS in action

ISBN 1-86227-209-3

9 781862 272095